This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

**Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

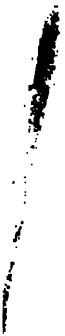
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

**About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Indian Institute, Oxford.

The Malan Library



# ARMENIA

AND

# THE ARMENIANS

BEING A SKETCH OF ITS
GEOGRAPHY, HISTORY CHURCH
AND LITERATURE

BY

Rd. JAMES Dr. ISSAVERDENS

MEMBER OF THE ARMENIAN INSTITUTION AND ACADEMY
OF ST. LAZARO AT VENICE

VENICE

PRINTED
IN THE ARMENIAN MONASTERY OF ST. LAZARUS

1874

BODLEIAN
- 9 JUN 1928
LIBRARY

# PREFACE

My sole object in presenting this work to the public is to satisfy a demand often made by the numerous visitors who come to our Monastery.

Should this work ever fall into the hands of those who have honoured the Armenian Institution with a visit, they will no doubt recall the many enquiries made by them as to the nature of the Armenian people, their Faith, their religious Rites, Church and Literature, etc. etc.

In order to give any thing like a satisfactory reply to such demands, the necessity of compiling a work on the

subject occurred to me, and I now offer this sketch, in the compilation whereof I am much indebted to the works written on the subject by our own Fathers of blessed memory.

A general history of Armenia was written in three large quarto volumes by Father Michael Chamich, a member of the Armenians of St. Lazaro at Venice. This was not only the first general history of Armenia ever published, (bearing date 1786), but the only one at present in existence. In the year 1811, Father Chamich published an abridgment of his own history, which was translated by J. Avdal, an Armenian of Calcutta, and has been of great service to me in the history of Armenia.

The geographical portions here given, were partly taken from the Geography of Armenia, written by F. Leon Dr. Alishan, a member of the Mekhitharistian Society, and published in the year 1855, at St. Lazaro near Venice.

I beg my readers to look leniently upon the English composition of this work. Being a foreigner and having a very slight knowledge of the language, I can have no pretentions, but have merely endeavoured to give a general idea of the history of a people, whose unhappy fate has well nigh drowned them in oblivion, and who to-day stand like some forgotten pillar of antiquity, yielding but a feeble answer to the pilgrim's query: "What place in the history of man can this ruined monument have occupied?,,

My answer to this question is simple enough: "Do but grant me patience, reader, and I will endeavour to satisfy you.,,

*Armenian Monastery*
*San Lazzaro.*
*Venice. April.* 5. 1874.

R^d. J. D^r. ISSAVERDENS.

# PART FIRST

## GEOGRAPHY OF ARMENIA

# PART FIRST.

## GEOGRAPHY OF ARMENIA.

Before we begin to relate about the Armenians, it is necessary to give to the reader a brief sketch of the Geography of Armenia or Hayasdan, as the Armenians call their own country after Haig, the patriarch and the founder of the Armenian nation.

### I.

### Armenia.

Armenia extends throughout a large tract of land between the Euxine and Caspian seas of a rather high and mountenous character. This extensive country in old times was divided into two large and distinct parts.

The first called Great Armenia, which was the largest part, was regarded as the real country of the Armenians. It was that space of land, which extends from 36,$^0$ 40′ to 41,$^0$ 50′ N. Lat., and from 36,$^0$ to 47$^0$ E. Long., according to the Meridian of Paris.

The whole of this land was divided into fifteen territories; each of them being again subdivided into many other provinces. The following are the names of the fifteen territories.

1. Upper Armenia.
2. Fourth Armenia.
3. Aghtznik.
4. Duruperan.
5. Mogk.
6. Gordjaik.
7. Pers-Armenia.
8. Vasburagan.
9. Sunia.
10. Artzakh.
11. Paidagaran.
12. Udi.
13. Cucark.
14. Daik.
15. Ararat.

The second was called Armenia Minor, and was connected to the first by right of conquest, in the beginning of the first Armenian royal dynasty. It was divided into three large territories, and called 1.st, 2.nd and 3.d Armenia, according to the order in which they were conquered.

Armenia so formed, is bounded on the East by Aderbadagan or Aderbeyjan, the Caspian Sea and the Shirwan. On the North, by Georgia or Iberia, the river Cyrus and

Mingrelia, the ancient Colchida. On the West, by Asia Minor. On the South, by Mesopotamia and Assyria.

The superficial extent of both Armenia is about 140,000 geographical square miles. (1)

On account af its high position, Armenia is called a Mountainous Island. It is a large tract of land from 3000 to 7000 feet above the level of the sea; and owing to the fact that it lies between the seas and the immense plains of Mesopotamia, it looks like an immense island.

## II.

### Mountain chains.

Armenia possesses many mountain chains, amongst which is the celebrated chain of Ararat, from which the large territory of Ararat derives its name. To this chain of mountains belongs the highest top called Massis, after the name of Amassia great grand Nephew of Haig, and upon which the natio-

(1) French measure. One mile = $\frac{1}{60}$ of a degree.
« « = 5702 feet.
« « = 1852 metres.
One foot = 144 lines
or 0,32484. metre.

nal tradition says that the Ark of Noah res
ed. The top of this mountain is always c
vered with perpetual snow. The height, take
from the Black Sea, is about 16,000 feet. It
a volcano, which for centuries remained e
tinguished, but it burned lately, in the ye
1840, and destroyed the old village of A
goory, where, according to tradition, Noa
planted the first vines.

The Taurus Mountain chain is celebrat
for its immense extent; its position is on t
West South of Armenia.

The Gordiaean mountains anciently forr
ed the bounderies between Armenia a
Assyria.

The Moskics and Parkar chains of Mou
tains, as well as several others of less ir
portance, form the mountainous crown
Armenia.

## III.

### Principal rivers.

Many and many are the rivers, that ta
ing their source in Armenia, run throug
the country watering and fertilizing i
fieldes. Many of these rivers carry their w
ters eastward and southward, to the Caspi
Sea and to the Persian Gulf. A few run t
wards the North to the Pontus.

The five principal ones are, Euphrates, which has two sources. The one springs from the mountains of Garin (Erzeroom), and is called by the Turks *Kara Sou*—(Black water). The other springs from the Dzalghi Mounts (or Mounts of flowers), and is called Aradzani. Thus these two sources form two branches, running separately until, joining each other, they, in one body, cross Mesopotamia, Assyria, join Tigris below Baghdad, and flow on to the Persian Gulf.

Tigris, the second river of Armenia, has also two sources, which, after joining each-other, reach Euphrates, and run in company to the Persian Gulf.

Araxe, is the Gihon of the Scriptures, and the third principal river of Armenia; which increasing its waters with many confluents, joins the

Fourth large stream of Armenia, the River Cyrus, and with it runs to the Caspian Sea.

Jorokh, the Phison of the Scriptures, is the fifth principal river of Armenia; its source is near Bybourth, on the Sbere mountains, from whence it runs to the Black Sea.

## IV.

### Principal lakes.

Amongst the several lakes which are spread over that large country, and are called by the national writers Seas on account of their size, the Lake or Sea of Van or Aghthamar is the largest and the most celebrated. The waters of this lake are salt, and extends to 80 miles in length and upwards of 40 miles in width, while its vast surface comprises nearly 1200 square miles. It lies 5130 feet above the sea, and includes within its space four islands: Ardére, Guedoutz, Lime and Aghthamar. This last island is the residence of an Archbishop who bears the title af Catholicos. Semiramis, the Assyrian queen, in her invasion into Armenia, was so pleased with the picturesque nature of this part of the country, that she built a magnificent city on the shores of this lake, called after her name Shamiramaghert.

Ourmia Sea comes next. It is like the former, a salt-water lake. It lies 4000 feet above the Sea, and is nearly as large. This in old times was called *Gaboudan* Sea.

Sevan or Ghelam Sea, whose sweet waters bound the Sevan Island, is the third principal lake, 6000 feet above the sea, and sur-

rounded by many high mountains. Its extent is more than 360 square miles.

Paravan See or Chuldur, Dzovk, Kaydadou (Baluk-ghiol), and many others are spread over the large surface of Armenia; but it is needless to mention them here.

## V.

### Volcanos.

As a mark of the volcanic formation of the soil of Armenia, we ought to mention the great number of burning mountains, which though extinguished or silent, still sometimes give notice of their interior work. In consequence of the existence of these silent Volcanos, numerous mineral sources and hot baths abound over the whole country, where they are used for the cure of divers kinds of sicknesses. As an example we must mention the hot baths near the town of Theodosiopolis (Erzeroom), celebrated in old times. They were erected by Anatolius, a General of the Emperor Theodosius, and are now called Ilija. Great many other hot baths are to be found near Hasankalé, Akhaltzikhe, Aladaghi and several other places, whose waters are generally sulphurous and ferruginous.

## VI.

### Climate.

The climate of Armenia varies according to the position and elevation of different localities; still in general we can say that it is a very cold one. Though in the same parallel of latitude of Spain, Italy, Greece and Asia Minor, yet it is colder than France, Germany and other European countries, that lie several degrees North of Armenia.

There are parts where the winter lasts for eight months, and others which for half the year are covered with snow.

Among the old Latin writers, as well as in some of the writings of the old Fathers of the Church, and of Greek and Roman Generals and Geographers, we find mentioned and celebrated the Armenian winter.

In the North part of Armenia and in the high situated lands of the South, the winter begins in october and lasts until may; many of the rivers quite freeze, and the snow covers the ground from 4— 6 feet thick. Then travelling becomes very dangerous, and sometimes entire caravans are buried under drifts of snow which fall from the mountains; or also they lose their way in those frequent

whirlwinds that drive the snow before them with such a force as to cover them like in a tomb.

For security, it is a very old custom among country travellers, mentioned also by Strabo, to carry with them long bars and to plant them upright in the ground; the tops of which remaining out of the snow, may give notice to other people, to come to their help and to free them from their snowy tombs.

As for the inhabitants of the country, they are accustomed to build underground houses or at least cabins half buried under the ground, where they remain sheltered against the cold season. The custom of building such houses is very old, and Xenophon makes mention of them 400 years before Christ. There is but one entrance to these houses which serves for both light and smoke, as well as for men and kine, the stable being always close to the house which is warmed by the breath of kine.

In the Ararat lands towards Erevan the snow lasts for five months; yet the cold is not less than that of Erzeroom. The Fahrenheit thermometer marks $10^0$ below zero ($-$ $26^0$ Réaumur).

The climate is milder in other parts of the South and the East of the country, and where the ground is lower than the rest. Thus in several parts March is the beginning of the

spring, but commonly April is the month of that season, in which begin to grow the early plants, and on the end of which month also the labourers begin to sow the seeds. In May the fruit-bearing trees begin to blossom and to be covered with leaves, and the shepherds drive their flocks to the lowest parts of the mountains.

After a long winter, summer, with excessive heat, succeeds to a very short spring; and in the very short space of three hot months, the black soil of cold Armenia buds, is covered with green, blossoms and yields its fruits.

In the plains of Araxe the harvest is earlier than in the grounds of Erzeroom. In the bounderies of Erevan grapes ripen earlier than in temperate Pontus. Because in the former places the heat becomes very great and the thermometer shews $100^0$ Fahrenheit ( — $30^0$ Réaumur.)

The excessive heats are succeeded by a very short autumn which is driven away by the winter season, with abundant snow.

Such is the climate of Armenia, where the weather is very healthy and free from diseases, except in the parts of Erevan. The longevity and the very strong constitution of the inhabitants are clear proofs of the salubrity of the country. Fever and catarrh are the common diseases of the inhabitants.

## VII.

### Vegetables.

In consequence of the abundant fertility of the soil. we find a rich quantity of vegetable production in Armenia. Though a great many localities are destitute of woods or forests, yet the necessary plants, vegetables and fruits, are abundantly spread every where over the land.

Grapes grow and ripen in great many places. In some places at a height of 5100 feet, as is the case near Van, and at 4250 feet, as on the slopes of Ararat.

Trees, such as the poplar, aspen, oak and many others, are very common, and are found also in very high localities, as in the Mount Soogave, at 8200 feet.

Among the plants that grow on very high positions we may mention the *Saxifraga Muxoides* the *Aster Alpinus*, the *Aster Pulchellus*, the *Potentilla*, etc. Likewise many beautiful flowers adorn the plains and the valleies, and amongst them is worthy of mention a red coloured lily, called by the natives the *Fountains' blood*, which, according to European authorities, is the most red and one of the most beautiful among red flowers.

Celebrated among the fruits are the grapes of the South Armenia, apricots, which grow in great many localities and which were brought to Europe from Armenia, and bear still the name Armeniaca; plums, apples, peaches, pome-granates, mulberry, whose leaves are used to feed the silk-worm, for silk industry is carried on in the Eastern provinces, melons and water-melons, and many others.

Olive-tree, carob-tree, fig-tree also grow in some localities as well as cotton, sesame, tobacco, flax, gall, rice and corn, which latter grows in great abundance every where.

Among the many plants that are used in pharmacy the one called by the Armenians *Loshdag* (*Bryonia Alba*), is worthy of mention; it grows like a root, bearing the shape o fa human body.

*Kasbé* is a sweet substance, white like snow, which comes down upon the trees in the summer season, very good to eat. It is an article of commerce between the inhabitants, and supposed to be something like the old Manna.

## VIII.

### Animals.

ss rich in different kinds of ani-
ıe Zoological Kingdom of the coun-
ıberless kinds of birds animate the
ıd European people who lived in
, say, that « the various kinds of
ich breed on the great plain of
, is so prodigious, as to be al-
redible to those who have not
n; they cover the earth for miles
s so completely, that the colour
round cannot be seen; particu-
ne period, when the whole country
y appearance, from the countless
a kind of red goose, a splendid
gh not good to eat, almost entirely
ı various shades of red. Troops of
ıarieties of the wild grey goose form
pots in the animated landscape,
cries and noises sounding in every
The plain is thickly covered with
ıus multitude of every kind of wild
ls are at one time almost as thick
and numerous varieties of small
ng which the horned lark and the
l finch, fly in clouds. » In the neigh-

bourhood of Erzeroom more than 170 kinds of wild birds have been counted. Among these the stork and the crane are the favourite guests of the Armenians, who often make them a subject of their popular songs. Still no body has made accurate researches among the fowl inhabitants of Armenia.

Equally rich is the list of wild animals, the hunting of which was celebrated in old times, and many of the neighbouring princes used to come together for that purpose. Tiger, leopard, hyana, lynx, bear, wolf, fox, large dogs, wild ass, buffalo, bull, lemming, gerboa, wild sheep whose agility and strength are astonishing, capricorn with its enormous horns, grey beaver, badger, polecat, porcupine, and many others in large herds are spread here and there over that huge country.

Of domestic animals, from the Turkish Armenia more than a million of sheep are sent every year to Turkey. The horses are also celebrated, and in old times it was the custom to send a certain number as tribute to the Persian king. As for camels though they frequent Armenia, they are only indigenous to the district of Erevan.

The lakes and rivers of Armenia contain also many kinds of fishes of various colours. We find in the lake of Van only a kind, called by the natives *darekh*, a sort of her-

ring, whose abundance is a source of commerce to the country. In the Sevan lake there are about twelve kinds of fishes. In the large rivers are found fishes of great size, as in the Aradzani, one of the branches of Euphrates, where was lately discovered a fish of the Cetaceous kind.

It is useless to mention the numberless kinds of insects, amongst which many new kinds were discovered by German Naturalists who brought specimens to Europe; still we must not forget the gnats of the Erevan districts, where in summer, the inhabitants, in order to escape from their torment, are accustomed to leave their houses and flee to the mountains.

The scorpion also is very dangerous owing to its immense size and the poison it emits.

## IX.

### Minerals.

As a general rule, the high land of Armenia has a formation of trachytus and porphyry, of which entire mountains are formed. Many other stones are to be found, such as augite, feldsbath, quartz, mélapyre, basalt, many kinds of white and speckled marbles; mines of mineral or rock-salt,

alum, nitre, naphtha, sulphur. Iron and copper are very abundant, as well as lead silver and veins of gold, magnesium, zinc and other metals. In old times the gold of Ararat was renowned, but now all trace of the mine are lost.

## X.

### Population.

According to the Scriptures, the Ark of Noah rested on a top of the Ararat mountains. From where, the survivors of a last mankind, coming down, peopled all the neighbouring country; until the space growing unsufficient for their increasing numbers, they parted from each other in search of new lands.

Haig is the Patriarch or the founder of the Armenian Nationality. He was amongst the builders of the tower at Sennaar; and after its destruction, taking his children servants and all his house with him, came back to Armenia, mastered the inhabitants who were living peacefully there, and was acknowledged as the head or king of the country, called after him Haiasdan, which was afterwards, for various reasons, changed by strangers to Armenia.

By and by people of various nationalities came to live in Armenia; and we find that 400 years after the Patriarch Haig, i. e. under the Government of Aram, — who made an invasion towards Asia Minor, and enlarged his kingdom, — Phrygians, Chappadoceans and other people, inhabitants of those countries, were mixed with the Armenians of the east provinces.

In latter times also many others, by invasions or by change of country, came to increase the number of the natural inhabitants of Armenia; Scytheans, Chaldeans, Assyrians, Chinese, Jews, Partheans, Indians, Georgians, who in old times came to live in Armenia, have their own particular place in the general history of Armenia, as they formed in the government of the country, different Satrapies, whose name we find mentioned in the books of Armenian authors.

These people though in the beginning differing from the natural inhabitants in religion, customs and language, yet under the influence of the time they changed all for those of the country, and were identified with the natural inhabitants.

In consequence of the healthy climate and the great fertility of the soil, as well as of the government of their peaceful kings, the number of the population of Armenia must have been increased in very high propor-

tion. And if we give attention to the names of the numerous dignitaries, families, provinces, towns and villages, we can rightly conclude, that Armenia in its happiest days, must have been as much peopled, as are many of the most populous countries of modern Europe.

But after the fall of the second Armenian royal dynasty, in the fifth century, barbarians begin to overrun Armenia, bringing every where sword, fire and devastation. The natives, unable to resist, begin to look for refuge in foreign countries. Thousands of Armenians flying before the invasions of barbarians, left their country. Towns and villages were destroyed, innocent people were killed, and ruin overran the country. In place of the Armenians strangers came to inhabit the country; these were Persians, Greeks, Arabs, Scytheans or Turks, Tartars, Georgians, Caucassians, Kurds, Osmanli Turks, etc.

Notwithstanding all this large number of stranger nations who came to inhabit the country. it was impossible that the population could encrease, on account of the continual wars and invasions of the barbarians, who put to destruction every thing. Thus the number of the inhabitants diminished more and more. So that now they estimate the number of inhabitants in Armenia at

about five millions, of which two millions can only be considered true Armenians.

No estimate has been made of the actual number of all the Armenians who are scattered here and there over the world. But according to the modern national geographers, the entire number amounts to about four millions, divided as it follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| Turkey; *Asia*, *Egypt* and *Europe*. | 2,550,000 |
| Russia . . . . . | 1,220,000 |
| Austria . . . . . | 25,000 |
| Persia . . . . . | 170,000 |
| East India and Archipelago of Asia | 25,000 |
| Western Europe . . . . | 10,000 |
| Total. . . . | 4,000,000 |

## XI.

### Arts and Commerce.

In old times, as well as now, the principal business of the Armenians is agriculture and commerce. As traders they were highly renowned, and they used to carry their goods to very far countries; every where they were welcome and strangers hoped to attract them to their own country.

We find in the Middle-Ages that lines of traders were passing through Armenia, and

Tabris and Erzeroom were the two depots where all the merchandise of Asia and Europe were consigned, to be transferred from thence to their own destinations.

Now commerce is carried on in general by the Armenians who live in foreign countries; amongst whom very wealthy people are to be found, principally among the Armenians of India, Austria and Turkey in Europe.

As for the native Armenians who live in Armenia itself, their principal business is agriculture, as the occupation of shepherd is to the foreign inhabitants. They lead very simple and sober lives and are happy in their poverty.

Nevertheless in the large towns are to be found merchants and also artists; and the common arts are: weaving, tanning, and the art of dyeing. There are also braziers, armourers, goldsmiths, tailors, cooks, bakers, etc.

In the same way in the larger towns there are many bankers, government-officials and interpreters in the consulates of foreign governments.

## XII.

### Character.

Amongst all the eastern nations the Armenians are distinguished for their intelligence, their mild character, their activity, for their industry, and their skill in commercial affairs. On account of their peaceful nature, they enjoy the sympathy of their conquerors more than any other nation in the East. So that we find them now occupying high posts under the three governments who rule the country, and principally in Turkey. They are celebrated for their aptitude in the acquirement of sciences and languages.

Their love for their Church and of all that regards their national rites is carried on nearly to a passion, for which continually arise the people, being incited by ambitious men.

Their principal national defect is discord, a consequence of self ambition. That has been the principal cause of their losing their national kingdom.

## XIII.

### Religion.

In the records of the Armenian history we find the first traces of idolatry in the time of king Anushavan, contemporary to Abraham; and therefore we have reason to think that before that time the knowledge and worship of one true god, the god of Noah, continued for a long while in Armenia.

According to Moses of Khoren, in his history of Armenia, the first idol was raised in that country by Semiramis. Then came the worship of national heros, to whom the Armenians offered honours of divinity; and subsequently they worshiped the Sun and the Moon.

Anahid, the Diana of the Latins, is the most ancient and the principal divinity the Armenians worshiped. She possessed many temples, but the principal one was that of Erisa, where a massive golden statue was erected to the goddess; this, according to Plinius, was the first golden statue that idolaters had erected. It was so celebrated, that worshipers from all nations used to journey thither, bearing rich gifts to the temple

Under the name of Asdghig the Armenians also worshiped Venus, as under the name of Aramazd they undertook the worship of Jupiter.

Christianity was introduced in Armenia by the Apostle Thaddeus, during the reign of Abgarus, king of Edessia. After the death of this king, they fell again into idolatry, until they were finally converted by St. Gregory the Illuminator, in the beginning of the fourth century, to which religion they have ever since remained faithful.

The Armenians now form two distinct principal branches, according to the religious opinions held by them. The largest one is that of the Eastern Church's belief; they form quite a separate Church, and are governed by three principal and independent authorities and two patriarchs. The first three are called *Catholicos*; the principal one is that of Etchmiadzin; he is acknowledged by all the Armenians as possessing the first rank, and his diocese is also the largest.

The Catholicos of Sis come next; his origin dates from the XIII.th. century.

The third is the Catholicos of Aghthamar, in the lake of Van; he dates from the X.th. century.

The two patriarchs are those of Jerusalem and Constantinople. The authority of the latter is very large, as he has under his ju-

risdiction fifty dioceses, whose bishops are consecrated by the Catholicos of Etchmiadzin.

The second branch is that of the Armenian Roman Catholics, who follow the Roman Church. Their number is about 160,000. In Russia they are ruled by the catholic Synod. In Persia they are under the jurisdiction of the delegates of Rome. The chief of the Armenians of Austria is the Armenian Archbishop of Lemberg; and of those Armenians who live in other parts, the Latin bishops.

The Armenians of Turkey have two Chiefs; the one is the Catholicos of Libanon, founded in the beginning of the XVIII$^{th.}$ century. His diocese extends to Cylicia, Armenia Minor and Assyria.

The other is the Primate Archbishop of Constantinople. His authority was instituted by the Court of Rome in the year 1831. He has five dioceses under his jurisdiction, in Armenia and Asia Minor. (1)

Out of these, in several parts of Pontus, as well as in Armenia Minor, there are also Greek-Armenians, who follow the persuasion and the rites of the Greeks.

(1) These two Roman Catholic Authorities, were lately united into one, in the person of the primate of Constantinople. But troubles ensued, which being still unsettled, it is impossible to say how the matter will end.

## XIV.

### Educational progress.

If we examine the Armenians on the point of general instruction, we find that they lack a good deal in comparison with European nations. Still we can say without doubt, that they are the most advanced among all the eastern nations. Constantinople, Smyrna, Armash, Jerusalem, Tifflis, Moscow, are the centres where they are the most advanced, and where they possess, colleges, schools, and printing presses.

In Europe also they possess Monasteries and Colleges, where Armenian young men are educated freely, and brought up, some for teachers, others for the employments of the Governments to which they belong.

In general the Armenians who are in contact with Europeans, are very much advanced; but still the enterior of Armenia is in want of progress, in consequence of their being remote from civilized centres.

Languages are much cultivated, as they want them for their commercial businesses, and also for the wants of the Governments where they live, and where they occupy different positions.

Amongst the women instruction is not

cerned in as much as it is wanted. general speaking. But in default of literary instruction they excel in needlework. And indeed great is the reputation they enjoy for the skill in embroidery in art which they have carried to a very high degree. Their beautiful works were admired in the Europea exhibitions, and prizes fixed for them.

## XV.

### CIVIL DIVISION AND GOVERNMENT.

The beginning of the civil life and government of the Armenians is contemporar with the most ancient nations. It was found ed, as we have already said by Haig, just after the destruction of the Tower of Babel about 2540 years before Christ, and lasted nearly 3000 years, under the dominion o two royal dynasties: the Haighian and th Arsacide.

In those times Armenia was divided int fifteen large departments or territories, and it 190 provinces; which again were subdivided into a multitude comunes, whose masters or governors, were under the immediate authority of the satraps. These last sometimes payed homage to the king of Ararat or the chief prince of the Armenians. at

other times they payed tributes and governed by themselves their own country.

In the year 428 of the new era, the Arsacide royal dynasty lost its governing power, and with it ended the monarchical government of the Armenians. Foreigners began to overrun Armenia, taking possession of her provinces, and destroying every thing by fire and sword. Persians. Greeks, Arabs, Turks and Tartars, holding the largest part of Armenia, ruled it according their own laws.

Nevertheless until the XII$^{th.}$ century, several parts of Armenia were under the dominion of Armenian princes, who protecting them against their enemies, governed them according their national laws. Such were, principally in the X$^{th.}$ and XI$^{th.}$ centuries, the Bagradunians, Ardzerunians and Sunians, Satrape families, who left an immortal name in the Armenian history.

After the invasions of the Seljuks and Tartars in the XI$^{th.}$-XIII$^{th.}$ centuries, Armenia remained under the foreign yoke, and still continues in the same condition. Now it is divided into three distinct parts; under Russia, who possesses the north; under Persia whose portion is the east; and under Turkey who possesses the west and the largest portion.

Erevan is the capital or principal town

of the Russian Armenia, as Tabris is that of Persia; while Erzeroom is the capital of Turkish Armenia, and the most important city of the whole country of that name.

## XVI.

### Cylicia.

An other mother country of the Armenians is reputed to be Cylicia. It is very old and many Armenian colonists settled there. Some settled themselves there by means of commerce, for they were continu lly in contact with the Pheniciens. Others through invasions came to dwell there. And finally, in the IX$^{th.}$ and X$^{th.}$ centuries, thousands of Armenians, flying before the barbarity of their foes, took refuge there.

In the year 1079, an Armenian prince called Rubene, established himself in Cylicia and founded the fourth dynasty of Armenian Kings, which lasted nearly 300 years, and whose last king Leo the VI$^{th.}$ died in Paris in the year 1393, his remains were transferred afterwards into St. Denis, where his tomb now is.

Now the principal town in Cylicia is Adana, and its population is about 20,000. It is the residence of a Turkish governor under the authority of the Sultan.

In Cylicia now the number of Armenians is supposed to be 150,000, but still there are a good number of them who have embraced the Turkish religion and become Mahometans, though they still acknowledge their Armenian origin and keep still in their language and in their families the customs of their forefathers.

# OLD AND MODERN NAMES
# OF THE PROVINCES
# OF ARMENIA MAJOR
# ACCORDING TO THE GEOGRAPHY
# OF F. LEON Dr. ALISHAN

| | Territories | Old Provinces | New Districts |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | UPPER ARMENIA | 1. Taranaghi. | Gamakh. Dujik. |
| 2 | | 2. Areudz. | Gherjanis. Sherian. |
| 3 | | 3. Mentzoor (Mezoor). | Kurutchay. Moontzoo |
| 4 | | 4. Egheghiatz. | Erzenga. |
| 5 | | 5. Mananaghi. | Shooshar. Thekman. |
| 6 | | 6. Tertchan. | Tertchan. |
| 7 | | 7. Sber. | Ispir. |
| 8 | | 8. Shadkomk. | Thorthoom. |
| 9 | | 9. Garin. | Erzeroom. Ovajeg. |
| 10 | FOURTH ARMENIA | 1. Khortzyan. | Gheghi. Arinj. |
| 11 | | 2. Hashdiank. | Jabaghtchoor. Khoolp |
| 12 | | 3. Baghnadoon. | Arghana.... |
| 13 | | 4. Palahovid. | Paloo. Saghman, |
| 14 | | 5. Zopk (of the Shahoonies). | Chemeshgadzak. Perte Gaban, etc. |
| 15 | | 6. Hantzith. | Kharpert. |
| 16 | | 7. Torek. | Thiriki. |
| 17 | | 8. Tekik. | Agel. Heni. |
| 18 | AGHTZNIK | 1. Arzen. | Kharzan. |
| 19 | | 2. Neperguert. | Mewfarghin. |
| 20 | | 3. Kegh. | Kharzan. Khezoo. |
| 21 | | 4. Ghethig. | |
| 22 | | 5. Dadik. | Taduan ? |
| 23 | | 6. Aznuatzor. | Sussan ? |
| 24 | | 7. Kherhethk (Serkhethk). | Segherd. |
| 25 | | 8. Guzegh. | Khizan. |
| 26 | | 9. Salnatzor. | Paghesh. |
| 27 | | 10. Sasoonk. | Sassoon. |

| Territories | Old Provinces | New Districts |
|---|---|---|
| DURUPERAN | 1. Khoyth. | Khooth. |
| | 2. Aspagunik. | Near Khoolp and Ghinj. |
| | 3. Daron. | Moosh. Chookhoor. |
| | 4. Ashmunik. | Khoolp. Varto. |
| | 5. Martaghi. | Thekman. Varto. |
| | 6. Tasnavork. | Kara-laze. |
| | 7. Duaradzadap. | Keoksoo, Karaiaze. |
| | 8. Talar. | Thorloo. |
| | 9. Hark. | Khamoor. Khenoos. |
| | 10. Varajnunik. | Khamoor. Liz. Boolanek. |
| | 11. Peznoonik. | Khlath. Ardzghe. |
| | 12. Erevark. | Ghewzel-dere. |
| | 13. Aghiovid. | Patnoz. Saresoo. |
| | 14. Abahunik. | Melazghert. |
| | 15. Gori. | Liz ? |
| | 16. Khorkhorunik. | Boolanek. |
| MOGK | 1. Ishayr. | Zerekan. Sbarghert. Gargar. |
| | 2. Ishayr the other | |
| | 3. Ishotz prov. | |
| | 4. Arwenitz valley. | Arwenitz valley. |
| | 5. Mitcha. | |
| | 6. Mogk proper. | Mogk. |
| | 7. Arkaitz prov. | Between Mogks and Shadakh. |
| | 8. Arkasovid. | |
| | 9. Chermatzor. | Shadakh. |
| GORJAIK | 1. Gortuk. | Bohtan. |
| | 2. Upper Gortik | |
| | 3. Middle « | |
| | 4. Low « | |
| | 5. Aidwank. | |

*Demorik*

| | Territories | Old Provinces | New Dist |
|---|---|---|---|
| 58 | GORJAIK | 6. Aikark. | |
| 59 | | 7. Mothoghank. | |
| 60 | | 8. Orsirank. | |
| 61 | | 9. Garabunik. | |
| 62 | | 10. Jahook. | |
| 63 | | 11. Lesser Aghpak. | Al-Bagh. Joola |
| 64 | PERS-ARMENIA | 1. Aily or Goo-rijan. | |
| 65 | | 2. Mary. | |
| 66 | | 3. Thrapi. | |
| 67 | | 4. Atzwers. | |
| 68 | | 5. Urna. | |
| 69 | | 6. Dampers. | |
| 70 | | 7. Zarehavan. | |
| 71 | | 8. Zaravant. | Salamasd. |
| 72 | | 9. Her. | Khoi. |
| 73 | VASBURAGAN | 1. Reshtunik. | Osdan. Cavash. |
| 74 | | 2. Dosp. | Van. |
| 75 | | 3. Pootunik. | Hamoog. |
| 76 | | 4. Arjishagovid. | Arjesh. |
| 77 | | 5. Aghovid. | Patnoz. |
| 78 | | 6. Gughanovid. | Haideranli Kur |
| 79 | | 7. Arperani. | Pergri. |
| 80 | | 8. Tarni. | Western part of |
| 81 | | 9. Poojunik. | Khoshab? |
| 82 | | 10. Arno-oden. | West of Segma |
| 83 | | 11. Antzevatzik. | Osdan. Karbah |
| 84 | | 12. Aderbadunik. | Between Khosl Segmanabad |
| 85 | | 13. Ervantunik or Erithunik. | Hayoz Zor. |

| | Territories | Old Provinces | New Districts |
|---|---|---|---|
| 6 | VASBURAGAN | 14. Martasdan. | Segmanabad. |
| 7 | | 15. Ardaz. | Magoo. |
| 8 | | 16. Aghé. | Magoo. |
| 9 | | 17. Great Aghpak. | Ser-Albagh. Karakoiunlu. |
| 0 | | 18. Antzakhatzor. | Kotoor. |
| 1 | | 19. Thornavan. | Chors. |
| 2 | | 20. Jewashrod. | Karakoiunlu under Aktchai. |
| 3 | | 21. Gurjunik. | Between Chors and Khoi. |
| 4 | | 22. Medznunik. | |
| 5 | | 23. Balunik. | |
| 6 | | 24. Coogan. | |
| 7 | | 25. Aghwantrod. | |
| 8 | | 26. Badesbarunik. | |
| 9 | | 27. Ardashezian. | |
| 0 | | 28. Ardavanian. | |
| 1 | | 29. Pakan. | |
| 2 | | 30. Capithian. | |
| 3 | | 31. Cazrigan. | |
| 4 | | 32. Dangryain. | |
| 5 | | 33. Varajnunik (probably Vrentchunik). | West of Nakhitchevan. |
| 6 | | 34. Coghthen. | Akoolis. |
| 7 | | 35. Nakhjwan. | Nakhitchevan. |
| 8 | | 36. Marant. | Marand. |
| 9 | SUNIA | 1. Erentchag. | Alenja. |
| 0 | | 2. Jahoog. | Nakhitchevan. Chahoog. |
| 1 | | 3. Vayotz Zor. | Vedi. Daralaghez. |
| 2 | | 4. Kegharkuni. | Province. Gheok-Chai. |
| 3 | | 5. Sodk. | Sotk. Zar. |
| 4 | | 6. Aghahejk. | Zanghiazor. |

| | Territories | Old Provinces | New Districts |
|---|---|---|---|
| 115 | SUNIA | 7. Zeghag. | Bargushad. Meghri. |
| 116 | | 8. Hapant. | Zanghiazor. |
| 117 | | 9. Paghk. | Bargushad. Datev. |
| 118 | | 10. Zork. | Ghapan. |
| 119 | | 11. Arevik. | Meghri. |
| 120 | | 12. Gussagan (Govsagan). | Urdabad. Ghenauz. |
| 121 | ARTZAKH | 1. Hapant the other. | Chlapert. Shooshi. |
| 122 | | 2. Vaygunik. | Chlapert. |
| 123 | | 3. Pertatzor (Pertzor). | Shamshadil. Ayroom. |
| 124 | | 4. Medzgwank. | Chlapert. Khatchenk. |
| 125 | | 5. Medzirank. | Ghiulisdan. Khatchenk. |
| 126 | | 6. Harjlank. | Varantin? |
| 127 | | 7. Mookhank. | Mooghan? |
| 128 | | 8. Biank. | Varantin? |
| 129 | | 9. Bandzgank. | Varantin? |
| 130 | | 10. Sissagan Osdan. | Khatchen. Zeyva. |
| 131 | | 11. Kusdi Parnes. | Shamkor? Khotchkhara. |
| 132 | | 12. Goghth. | Shamshadil. Zagam. |
| 133 | PAYDAGARAN | 1. Hrakod-Beroj. | |
| 134 | | 2. Vartanaghert. | |
| 135 | | 3. Yotenporaghian Pakink. | Bakoo. |
| 136 | | 4. Rodi-Pagha. | Arkevan (Thalish). |
| 137 | | 5. Paghanrod. | Arkevan (Thalish). |
| 138 | | 6. Arosbijan. | Sepedash (Thalish). |
| 139 | | 7. Hani. | |
| 140 | | 8. Athshi. | Bakoo. |
| 141 | | 9. Pakavan. | Bakoo. |
| 142 | | 10. Sbantaran-Beroj. | |

| | Territories | Old Provinces | New Districts |
|---|---|---|---|
| 13 | PAYDA-GARAN | 11. Ormezt-Beroj. | |
| 14 | | 12. Alevan. | |
| 15 | UDI | 1. Aranrod. | |
| 16 | | 2. Dri. | Keberlin. |
| 17 | | 3. Rodbatzian. | |
| 18 | | 4. Aghwé. | |
| 19 | | 5. Dutchkadag. | |
| 20 | | 6. Cartman. | Kurthmanig. Kartman. |
| 21 | | 7. Shigashen. | Kantzak. |
| 22 | | 8. Udi proper. | Jevanshir. Berdé. |
| 23 | CUCARK | 1. Zoropor. | Zoroked. |
| 24 | | 2. Zopopor. | Bortchaloo. |
| 25 | | 3. Goghpopor. | Khazakh. Bortchaloo. |
| 26 | | 4. Dashir. | Lori. Pampaghi. |
| 27 | | 5. Threghk. | Thrialetff. |
| 28 | | 6. Gaukark. | Abotz. Pampaghi. |
| 29 | | 7. Ardahan, | Ardahan. |
| 30 | | 8. Chavakhk. | Chavakhethi. Khertvis. |
| 31 | | 9. Cughartchk. | Glarjethi. Ardanooch. |
| 32 | DAYK | 1. Gogh. | Geolé. |
| 33 | | 2. Pertatzpor. | Peneg. Tavusghiar. |
| 34 | | 3. Bardizatzpor. | Olthi. Bardez. |
| 35 | | 4. Jag. | Chukhureth. Erusheth. Akhaltzikhe. |
| 36 | | 5. Pukha. | Shavsheth. Thavusghiar. |
| 37 | | 6. Okaghe. | Thorthoom. |
| 38 | | 7. Azortapor. | Nariman. Thorthoom. |
| 39 | | 8. Asiatzpor. | Pertakrag. Barkhar. |

| | Territories | Old Provinces | New Districts |
|---|---|---|---|
| 170 | | 1. Passen. | Passen. Hassankalé. |
| 171 | | 2. Capeghiank. | High Passen. |
| 172 | | 3. Apeghiank. | Low Passen. |
| 173 | | 4. Havunik (Vahevunik). | Low Passen. |
| 174 | | 5. Arsharunik. | Chalderan. Gaghzwan. |
| 175 | | 6. Pakrevant. | Alashgherd. |
| 176 | | 7. Zaghgoden. | Diadin. Nahié. |
| 177 | | 8. Shirag. | Shoreghel. Ghiumrew. |
| 178 | ARARAT | 9. Vanant. | Ghars. |
| 179 | | 10. Arakadzoden. | Sardarabad. |
| 180 | | 11. Jagadk. | Darakend. Goghp. |
| 181 | | 12. Masiatzoden. | Bayezid. Surmari. |
| 182 | | 13. Gokovid. | Bayezid. (Taroynk). |
| 183 | | 14. Ashotzk. | Abaran. |
| 184 | | 15. Nik. | Geok Chai. (Erevan). |
| 185 | | 16. Godayk. | Kurkbulak. Erevan. |
| 186 | | 17. Mazaz. | Geok Chai. Abaran. |
| 187 | | 18. Varajnunik. | Daratchitchak. |
| 188 | | 19. Osdan of Duin. | Garpi. Karnibazar. |
| 189 | | 20. The Sharoor field. | Sharoor. Khok. etc. |

END OF THE GEOGRAPHICAL NOTIONS.

# PART SECOND

## HISTORY OF ARMENIA

# HISTORY OF ARMENIA

## A GENERAL SKETCH OF THE ARMENIAN HISTORY DURING THE FIRST ROYAL DYNASTY.

---

### CHAPTER I.

### HAIG.

### B. C. 2540. *

The principal sources of the Armenian National history repose upon what is related by Moses of Khoren, a celebrated Armenian writer of the fifth century, who founds his history of Armenia, upon the book of Mar-Abas Catina. - a learned Syriac, who, about 150 years before Christ. wrote a book upon the origin of the Armenians, from what he had found in some book preserved in the Archives of Nineveh.

(*) Year of the creation of the World according to the Septuagint 2663.

Now, according to Moses of Khoren, the Armenians draw their origin from Haig, who was a son of Torgomah, Son of Gomer, Son of Japhet.

Haig, together with his sons, and daughters and their families, was on the dispersion of the descendants of Noah, in search of a new place of habitation, in the country of Senaar in Mesopotamia, and was probably one of the builders of the Tower of Babel. And as he lived there for a long period, he witnessed all the events which happened, as well as the building of Nineveh and the foundation of sovereign power in Assyria by Belus. During this time his descendents rapidly increased, and his sons Armenag, Manavaz and Khor, had already distinguished themselves by their wisdom and virtue.

The authority which Belus had succeeded in establishing over the country of Mesopotamia proving burthensome, Haig, with his family, amounting to 300 persons, exclusive of servants, sought another place of abode. He first proceeded northward to the country round about Ararat, and incorporated with his followers a number of people, whom he found living there. Settling his grandson Cadmus, the Son of Armenag, near Mount Ararat, he proceeded with the rest of his family to the northwest, and arriving on an extensive plain, he gave to it the name of

*Hark* (Fathers); where he built a town and called it after his name, Haygashen, (founded by Haig). Here he dwelt with his descendants, compelling the surrounding people to submit to the laws he had instituted for the government of his own family.

As soon as Belus was informed of Haig's withdrawal from his authority, he dispatched a deputation headed by his own Son, to recall him to obedience; and on his refusing to do so, he gathered a large force, and marched towards Armenia which he entered by the settlement formed, as we have said, by Cadmus. Meanwhile Cadmus immediately sent notice to Haig, and taking his family, took refuge with him.

The invader marched forward to Haygashen. Haig, on his side, collected all his people, armed them as well as he was able and advanced against Belus, halting on the shore of the lake of Van. Where addressing his men he said: "When we meet with Belus army, let us attempt to draw near where he lies surrounded by his warriors: either we shall be killed and our camp equipments and baggage will fall into his hands; or making a show of the strength of our arm, we shall defeat his army and the victory will be ours.,,

And so they did. As soon as they advanced, they saw Belus coming against them

surrounded by a select body of his best troops, while the remainder of the army stood behind. He was completely cased in iron armour, as were also the soldiers.

The fight commenced, the conflict was bloody, but Belus was repulsed; and in endeavouring to effect a retreat to the main body of his army, he fell by an arrow discharged at him by Haig; which hitting him on his brazen breastplate went through his body. Thus perished Belus; and his whole army, panic-struck at the loss of their chief, dispersed and fled.

Haig covered the battle-field with buildings and called it Hayk, after which the country around was called Hayotz-tzor; and the place where Belus fell, called Kerezmank (Tombs). He caused the body of Belus to be embalmed and conveyed to Hark, where it was interred on a height.

Thus being free from his powerful foe, he founded the Armenian nation, which after his name was called Hayk.

According to the testimony of Marybas, Haig was a man of an extremely imposing figure and extraordinary strength; being rather tall, with sharp penetrating eyes, and hair of a silky softness. He had such strength of arm, that few of his subjects could bend his bow. After signalizing himself in various exploits against the powers by which he

was at different times assailed, and ordering with wise regulations his infant monarchy, he died in peace in his own country, and was succeeded in his authority by his son Armenag.

The Haiks or Armenians were also known by the appellations of Torgomeans, Ascanazians, and Japhethians. The first of these is derived from Torgomah, the father of Haig; the second from Ascanaz his uncle, and the third from Japheth his great grandfather.

Haig had seven brothers; Carthlos, Partos, Movgan, Leg, Heros, Govgas, and Ecres. Carthlos settled in the vicinity of Mount Ormuz, where he built a fortress, calling it Orbeth, from the name of his youngest son. This fortress was afterwards known by the name of Shamshouldey. The eldest son of Carthlos built the city of Muzkhitha, called after his own name. From him the Georgians are descended. The remainder of the brethren of Haig dispersed themselves over various parts of Caucasus and founded states, which, in the lapse of a few ages, became great and powerful.

## Chapter II.

### Armenag and his successors.

### B. C. 2269.

Armenag succeeding to his father the government of the country, quitted H leaving there his two brothers, and wi large body of his people, advanced a days journey to the north-east. Arrivin a plain which was delightfully situate the foot of a mountain, by which ran a ver of the purest water, he halted and l a city there, calling it after himself Arak Having fixed here his seat of governm after a peaceful life he died, and was ceeded by Aramays, his son.

This prince built a city of hewn st on a small eminence in the plain of Arak near the banks of the river, which had ceived the name of Gihon, and called it mavir, which afterwards became the ca of his kingdom, and after the name of son Erast, he changed the name of the r to Arax.

Amassia, the son of Aramays, succe his father and fixed the seat of his gov

ment in the city of Armavir. He built two cities at the foot of Mount Ararat. He changed also the name of the Mount to that of Foot of Massis, after himself.

Kegham came next in succession, and enlarged his dominions, and Harma his son mastering the country embellished it with buildings. Then came the reign of Aram.

## Chapter III.

### Aram and his successors.

### B. C. 1831.

Aram by his wisdom and policy greatly extended the dominion of his kingdom. The Armenian power under the guidance of this prince, was acknowledged from Mount Caucasus to Mount Taurus.

Shortly after his assumption of the royal authority, his kingdom was invaded by the Medes, under their prince Newkar. Aram immediately, heading a body of troops of 50,000 men, with a hasty and secret march, took them by surprise, killed a great number of them and made prisoner Newkar their chief, who was nailed by the head to the fortifications of Armavir. Then Aram subjugated that part of the territory of the

Medes, which lies between Armenia a
Mount Zarasp.

Parsham, a Babylonian prince, th
years after invaded Armenia with a la
body of troops. But he was met by Ara
defeated and slain. Aram immediately a
marched toward Cappadocia, defeated
prince of that country and made him p
oner, and appointed Mishag, one of his
lowers, to the government of Cappado
ordering him to force the inhabitants to
only the Armenian language.

This prince was the first to raise the
menian name to any degree of renown;
that contemporary nations, in making m
tion of the actions performed by his subje
under his personal direction, called them
deeds of the Aramians, or followers of Ara
a name which has been corrupted into
menians; and the country they inhabited,
universal consent, took the name of Ar
nia. Such is the origin of the denominat
which now distinguishes our country amc
foreigners.

Cappadocia being conquered, received
name of Armenia; from whence Aram
tended again his arms to other countr
conquering them, and according to
order in which they were reduced, they
ceived the names of First, Second and Th
Armenia Here the progress of Aram's ar

ceased, and the whole three provinces were thenceforward called Lesser or Minor Armenia, to distinguish it from the country of Haig, which took the title of Great Armenia. One of the fifteen provinces of the latter, situated near the river Euphrates, borders on Lesser Armenia, and is sometimes, in allusion to the divisions of the latter, called the Fourth Armenia.

At this time Ninus, the powerful king of Assyria, who was a descendant of Belus, who had fallen by the hand of Haig, meditated revenge, and would have invaded Armenia, had it not been for his counsellors, who felt rather intimidated by the fame of Aram's skill and courage. The two Monarchs some time afterwards, entered into a bond of amity, Ninus bestowing on Aram a wreath of pearls, then considered a peculiar mark of honour, and giving him the title of his brother and colleague.

The era of Aram's kingdom may be regarded as the dawn of the greatness which the Armenian nation afterwards attained to, and which shone with such lustre during the sway of the Arsacides.

On Aram's death, Ara his son ascended the throne of Armenia; he was surnamed the Handsome, from the extreme beauty of his person. Ara considerably improved the kingdom, and his administration of public

affairs, at that period, was so highly appreciated, that in proof of its excellence, it was named the Ayraratian Government.

Semiramis, the first woman invested with sovereign power, possessed extremely loose principles. Having heard of the personal beauty of Ara, she sent him an offer of her hand and crown; or if he did not choose to marry her, she besought him to visit her at Nineveh to gratify her sensuality, when she would load him with riches, and permit him to return in safety to Armenia.

Ara, disgusted at such a proposition, drove her ambassadors with disgrace out of his country. This brought on a war; Semiramis invading Armenia, Ara hastened to appose her. Though the Assyrian queen had commanded her soldiers to spare the life of Ara, and to endeavour to take him alive; nevertheless the Armenians being defeated, their prince was slain; at which circumstance Semiramis was deeply afflicted, and having procured his dead body, endeavoured to restore life to it by means of magical incantations. But seeing that the Armenians, irritated at the loss of their king, were preparing to avenge his death, she, alarmed, directed one of her favourites to personate the unfortunate Ara, whom she declared to his subjects, to have been restored to life by the peculiar favour of the Gods. This artifice

succeeded in pacifying the Armenians, and Gartos, the son of Ara, at the age of 12 years, was raised by Semiramis to the throne of his father.

The Assyrian queen was so pleased with the salubrity of the air and the fertility and picturesque nature of the country, that before returning to Assyria, she built a magnificent city on the shores of the Sea of Aghthamar or Lake of Van, where twelve thousand workmen and six hundred architects were employed in the erection of the buildings in this city. It became thenceforward the summer residence of Semiramis.

Gartos, surnamed Arayan Ara, after the order of Semiramis, had one son named Anushavan, who was solemnly dedicated to the poplars planted around Armavir by king Armenag, - because of a superstitious idea that those trees were the favourite terrestrial residences of the Gods. —

When Semiramis, flying before Ninyas her son, who rebelled against her, took refuge in Armenia, Gartos receiving her with all the friendship he could demonstrate, raised an army and marched with her against Ninyas. But they were defeated and both slain, and Anushavan fell into the hands of the Assyrian Monarch, who, through the intercession of some of the Assyrian nobles, released him and restored him to a part of his hereditary

dominions, on condition that he should
homage for them to the Assyrians.
assuming the royal dignity. Anushavan
the alternate use of arms and policy,
tually recovered the whole kingdom.

Bared, one of the nearest collateral br
of the family of Anushavan, who died
out issue, became possessor of the th
of Armenia. In his time, Joseph, the Je
Patriarch died in Egypt.

Arpag succedeed Bared, whose succ
was Zavan, in whose days the Athenian
the Lacedaemonian states were founded

He was succeeded by Parnag the
who was conquered, but restored t
kingdom, by Sesostris, king of Egypt.

At this period the children of Israel
ted Egypt (B. C. 1491).

Soor was the successor of Parnag
whose time the Jews took possession o
naan, and many of the aborigines of
country took refuge in Armenia, under
conduct of Canaanidas, a man of imm
riches. The Gunthunians, who are
known in the annals of the Armenian
tory, are descended from him.

After Parnag, from the year B. C. 14
the year 1198, according to the Septua
we find mentioned in the Armenian hi
about fourteen kings who succeeded to
other on the throne of Armenia. The fift

was Zarmayr, who proved a warlike and successful prince. During his reign the famous siege of Troy occurred, and as he was an ally of the besieged people, he went to their assistance, and fell in an encounter with Achilles.

After the death of this king twelve others followed in succession to the throne of Armenia, until the second year of the foundation of Rome, when Baroyr, the son of Scaorty, the last successful king, took possession of the throne (B. C. 752). This prince was an ally of Arbaces, prince of the Medes, who went to dethrone Sardanapalus king of Nineveh; in recompense of which he was solemnly crowned king of Armenia, a ceremony which the former princes, who ruled over Armenia, although they possessed all the power of absolute princes, had never undergone publicly, and the ensigns of royal dignity, the crown and sceptre, were scarcely known by them to have an existence.

It was during the reign of this prince that Sennacherib, who had lost all his army by the sword of the avenging angel, in his expedition against the Jews, meditated the sacrifice of his two sons, Adramelech and Sharezer, in order to appease the anger of the Gods. The intended victims killed their father Sennacherib, and took refuge in Armenia, where they were kindly received by

King Baroyr, who allotted them portio land for their maintenance. From Adr lech two armenian Satrapies are descen the Ardzrunians and the Gununians; his brother, the Sassunians.

After Baroyr five other kings rei over Armenia, until the sixth, Haygag Second, who joined Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon in his expedition ag the Jews, took out of captivity one of chiefs, named Shampad together wit his family, and brought him into Arm From this Shampad descended the family of the Pagradunians, which wards possessed the throne of Armenia, which derived their name from the i trious Pagarad who shed such a lustr the reign of Vagharshag.

## Chapter IV.

### Tigranes the Hayguian.

### B. C. 569.

To Haygag succeeded Erwand the I and to him Tigranes, who maintained dignity by virtues of the highest orde was endowed by nature with the mos timable qualities of the mind, and was

distinguished for the most chivalric bravery; so that during his reign the manners and customs of the Armenians experienced a complete revolution. He engaged in several wars with the adjacent powers, in all of which he was successful. He defeated the Greeks, and compelled them for a long period to pay him tribute.

Cyrus being at this time at the head of the Persian nation, an alliance offensive and defensive was formed between this Monarch and Tigranes, which Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, also joined. This threefold alliance intimidated Ahasuerus king of Media, who was at this time at war with Cyrus.

While the king of Media was still under the influence of his fears, he had a dream full of terrible portent. He beheld a mountain in labour, which in the end produced three warriors. One of these appeared seated on the back of a furious lion, which he guided toward the west. The second rode on a leopard and took a northerly direction. The third, more terrible in aspect than the two former, was borne by a dragon, which forthwith appeared to enter and desolate the whole face of the country of Media. The king thought that he endeavoured to stop the progress of the hero with the dragon, but was wounded and killed by him.

The interpretation of this dream accor-

ding to his wisemen, was, that the first Cyrus, the second Nebuchadnezzar, an third who brought him to destruction Tigranes, by whom they augured the M would be conquered.

Ahasuerus resolved to remove Tig by assassination and to meet the othe in the field. He sent therefore ambass into Armenia with presents to the king begged his sister Tigrana in marriage, v he promised to exalt to the dignity of Q of Queens. Tigranes, not suspecting the of Ahasuerus, complied with his desire sent his sister into Media, where the riage was immediately celebrated, and suerus, in prosecuton of his designs, her a respect almost bordering on adora in order to prepare her to second him i attempt on the life of her brother. At le he disclosed to her his designs, endeavo at the same time to stir up her jealou gainst Zaruhi, the wife of her brother, he told her, had instigated Tigranes to Cyrus to extirpate the royal family of M " You don't know, said he, that Tig your brother, instigated by Zaruhi his cannot bear to see you queen of the M What will follow? Until my death, Z cannot reign over them and be que queens. Therefore now you ought to fi which means you can destroy your bro

otherwise you will lose your high dignity and be dishonoured before all the queens.,,

But Tigrana was a wise woman and too affectionate a sister, to engage in the black designs of her husband. She appeared to listen to his proposals with pleasure, but by means of trusty servants, she sent secretly a faithful account of the plots of the king her husband.

Tigranes on receiving intelligence, became furious; he despatched messengers to Cyrus, requesting him to push on the war vigourously against Ahasuerus ; and he, in the mean time, at the head of a large army advanced to the frontiers of Media, waiting to commence hostilities, until Tigrana his sister, could effect her escape; which she succeeded in doing five months after. At which time Cyrus also arriving with a Persian army, the two princes forthwith entered Media.

Ahasuerus attempted to protect his dominions; but he was defeated, and fell by the hand of Tigranes, who killed him by a thrust of his spear. The country submitted to the victors and was added to the dominions of Cyrus, while Tigranes returned to Armenia loaded with booty, and in gratitude to his sister, he gave her the city of Tigranaguerd, which he had lately built, with a large extent of country in its environs.

The women of Ahasuerus, who were prisoners in the last battle, with the re der of the captives whom Tigranes br from Media, were settled near Nakhjua along the banks of the river Arax.

When afterwards, Cyrus at the head army went to the conquest of Lydia, Tig being an ally with him, accompanied h that country, where king Croesus was quered. Likewise Tigranes accompanie former in his expedition against Baby as we find mention in the prophecy of miah, where the Prophet names the kin of Ararat. ( Ch. 51. V. 27. )

King Tigranes was one of the gr and most valiant princes of Armenia when, after 45 years of a glorious he died, his death was the signal general mourning throughout Armen left three sons from Zaruhi: Bab, and Vahagun.

## Chapter V.

### Vahagun and other kings.

### B. C. 524.

The third successor of Tigranes Vahagun, who was a man of a warlik position. His personal strength and co

were so great that he was usually called by his subjects Hercules the Second. He performed many gallant exploits and became so renowned, that songs in his praise were composed and sung by the Armenians and Georgians. A statue of this monarchwas erected in Georgia, in commemoration of his great qualities, and divine honours were paid to him.

Seven kings succeeded to Vahagun, one after the other, on the throne af Armenia, the last of whom was Vahé, (B. C. 359), who was an ally of Darius king of Persia, at that time engaged in war against Alexander the Macedonian. Vahé had sent to his assistance an army of 40,000 infantry and 7,000 cavalry; but Darius was conquered by Alexander and killed. Vahé remembering his former friendship and wishing to avenge his death, assembled a vast army and advanced against Alexander. But the battle proved fatal to him, and being defeated he was killed, (B. C. 332.); with him a vast number of his army also perished on the field, and many others were made prisoners. Thus the whole of Armenia fell into the hands of Alexander, and the Hayguian dynasty lost the crown of Armenia, which became a province of the empire of Alexander the Macedonian, and was ruled by governors. These were seven in number, following in

succession, the first of whom was appo by the conqueror, the others were nom ed by his successors.

Under the rule of these governors, tiochus of Seleucia, divided Armenia two governments, of which one was c Armenia Major, and the other Arn Minor.

It was during this time (B. C. 188) Hannibal the Carthagenian, found an as with Ardashes the governor of Armenia jor, who following the advice and the of the great general, founded the ci Ardashad, on the left shore of Arax, against Mount Ararat, and changed the seat of his government.

END OF THE HISTORY OF THE HAYGUIAN DYNASTY.

# HISTORY OF ARMENIA

## THE SECOND OR ARSACIDE ROYAL DYNASTY OF ARMENIA

---

### CHAPTER I.

### VAGHARSHAG, ARSHAG AND ARDASHES.

Now we shall begin our historical sketch about 150 years before the new era.

At this time reigned over the Parthians Arsaces or Arshag the Second, styled the Great. He was a grandson of Arsaces the Parthian, who threw off the Seleucian yoke and established his sway over the Parthians, Persians, Medes, and Babylonians, and formed the Parthian kingdom, to which he added also a portion of Armenia.

Arsaces the Second extending his conquests, subsequently conquered the whole of Armenia; and expelling Ardavazt, the last governor of this country, appointed his own brother Vagharshag king of both Armenia

Major and Minor, to which he annexed th country of Aderbadagan or Aderbeyjan.

Vagharshag assuming the government Armenia, established himself in Nisibis (B. C 149), and soon after assembled an immens army with the determination of extendin his dominions. He advanced towards th borders of Armenia Minor, which was gi en to him by his brother, but whose g vernor was still Morpewligues under th Seleucians.

A league was formed between the Cha daeans, Laziguians, the people of Pontu Cappadocians, Phrygians and others, and th brave Morpewligues was appointed leader them. The two armies meeting each othe Morpewligues with a number of brave me rushed towards the enemy and opened h way to the king Vagharshag, whom h would have killed, but the warriors of th race of Haig and those of Sennacherib, pr tecting the life of their king, killed th brave Morpewligues on the spot, and h army was put to flight. Thus Cappadoci Pontus, Laziguia, Chaldaea and Egeria, b came his tributaries. He then returned his city to Nisibis.

Now Vagharshag being in profound peac expressed a wish to know the origin of th Armenians, and of the events that ha taken place in their country. He cou

not find any satisfactory notice in Armenia, and resolved at length to consult the old Chaldaean manuscripts. For this purpose he found a very learned man called Marybas Catina, a Syrian, and sent him to Arsaces his brother, with a letter, requesting him to permit the bearer to examine the ancient manuscripts lying in the Royal Archives of Nineveh, and extract from them whatever might be found relating to the Armenians.

In those Archives Marybas Catina found a manuscript in the greek character with this label: "This book, containing the annals of ancient history, was translated from Chaldaean into Greek by order of Alexander the Great. „ He extracted from that the history of Armenia, from Haig to Vahé, and returned to Vagharshag in Nisibis, where continuing the history till the time of Vagharshag, he presented it to the king, who ordered it to be preserved with great care in his treasury.

Vagharshag then commenced to improve his kingdom and people, and formed his army according to the manner of the Romans. For the improvement of his government he appointed two officers. The business of one was to remind the king of his duty, when he was tempted to unjust or cruel measures. The other was directed to impress on the king's mind the necessity of punishing

crime, and the salutary effects of exampl when he was inclined to be unjustly weakly merciful.

Pagarad, the Jew, his counsellor, was a pointed by him to the hereditary office placing the crown on the kings head at t coronation. And in order to prevent disco amongst his several sons, about the succes on to the throne, he established a la that only the eldest son should remain wi the reigning king at Nisibis, while the ot ers should be kept at a distance in t province of Hashtens, where each had estat allotted him and an allowance from the ro al treasury. This law was observed by a the Arsacides, as the second Armenian Roy dynasty was called, from their ancestor A saces the Parthian. Vagharshag, after a reig of twenty-two years, died in Nisibis.

The successor of Vagharshag was Arsha the First, his eldest son (B. C. 131), who good qualities equalled those of his fathe He was brave, and defeated the armies the people of Pontus, who had rebelled gainst him. Being extremely bigoted in reli ion, he ordered a persecution of the Jew and put two of the Pagradunians to death but he could not induce them to worshi idols.

Ardashes the First, his eldest son, succeede him (B. C. 118); this prince was great

glorious and good, and his actions eclipsed those of his predecessors. At this period the king of Persia was reckoned, amongst his eastern contemporaries, to have the precedence of the king of Armenia: but in the splendour of his exploits, the latter, in the person of Ardashes, raised himself greatly above the former. Nay, all Persia was under his control, and he built palaces there, and struck money bearing his name and image. His son Tigranes always remained with his father, trained to the usual military exercises of a young prince. His daughter Ardashama was given in marriage to the great and valiant Mithridates, to whom was also intrusted the government of the nations inhabiting the Northern mountains and the borders of the Pontic Sea.

Inflated with the contemplation of his greatness, Ardashes became vainglorious, and sought for gratification in the splendour of foreign conquests.

He assembled an army so numerous that he himself did not know their number, and with that multitude, set out on his expedition. He subdued the whole of Asia Minor, and fitting out a fleet, past the Hellespont and conquered Thrace and Greece, destroyed the chief cities in these countries, entered the Morea and defeated the Lacedemonians. Having thus gratified his thirst for conquest,

he returned to Armenia, where he appointed his son Tigranes to the temporary government of his kingdom, and again set out on another expedition into Persia.

Shortly after he planned another expedition; but a sedition broke out amongst the soldiers, and Ardashes unable to quell them, endeavoured to get away into Armenia from the danger that threatened him; but he was slain, and in dying, he exclaimed: "Alas! how transient and unsatisfactory is glory„!

Ardashes from his conquests brought to Armenia several well executed bronze and gilt idols, with their respective priests. One of these was the statue of Diana, which is called also Anahid by the Armenians, and was placed by Tigranes at Eriza.

## Chapter II.

### Tigranes the Second.

### B. C. 93.

Tigranes the Second succeeded his fa in the kingdom of Armenia. He nomin his brother-in-law Mithridates his secor the kingdom; and on the Greeks inva his dominions, in the first year of his r he marched against them, accompani

Mithridates, and entirely defeated them. Immediately after he repaired to Mashag, or Cesarea, and taking possession of Asia Minor, he placed in charge of it Mithridates, appointing him king of Pontus and the regions about the Mediterranean, and left with him a considerable number of troops. After their separation, Tigranes became daily more powerful, and many countries were subdued by him, whose kings were kept captives at his court, to enhance the glory of his state.

Tigranes now allied to Mithridates, his brother-in-law, sent his troops into Cappadocia, to help Ariarath, the son of Mithridates, against the Romans. Afterwards he marched against Antiochus Pius, king of the Seleucians, defeated him and governed his country. He subdued also Assyria, then made an incursion into Palestine, whence, on his return to Nisibis, he brought a number of captive Jews.

On the Roman Senate revoking the treaty made by Cornelius Sylla and Mithridates, war was again declared between them. Tigranes at the instigation of Mithridates, entered Cappadocia unexpectedly, subdued the whole country and drove out to Armenia 300 000 of the population. He then returned to his own kingdom, despatching to Mithridates a large body of his troops.

Mithridates being defeated at last by Lu-

cullus and despairing of success, becaus
the treachery of his generals, retired to
menia. But Tigranes was so much offen
at his conduct in thus relinquishing all h
that he would not suffer him to appea
his presence for a long while. Until Lucu
sending to him an officer named App
required the immediate delivery of Mit
dates to the Roman State. Tigranes refus
to comply with the demand of Lucullus,
thridates being his relation, war bec
inevitable between them. Mithridates
immediately put in command of 10,000
valry and despatched to Pontus.

Lucullus advanced upon Tigranaguerd
laid siege to it. Tigranes hearing this,
6,000 troops to the place, which taking
Romans by surprise, broke through t
camp, entered the city and carried off
king's concubines and a large quantit
treasure.

Then Tigranes marched at the hea
360,000 men, to meet Lucullus, who lea
some troops in Tigranaguerd to continue
siege, advanced towards the Armenian k
with 24 cohorts and 1,000 slingers and
chers.

Tigranes on seing the small numbe
the Romans was careless about provid
against the chance of a defeat, and w
the Romans commenced the attack, his a

being unprepared, was overcame with confusion. The trumpeters were unable to sound a retreat, and soon the Armenians gave themselves to indiscriminate flight; 5000 of them were killed on the field and many taken prisoners. Tigranes himself took shelter in a fortress with some of his troops. Lucullus returned to Tigranaguerd, which he afterwards took and found in it vast treasures. But the cavalry of Tigranes distinguished itself against that of Lucullus in several charges.

Tigranes, burning with resentment against the Romans, appointed Mithridates to command an army against them, who continued the war with varying success.

Tigranes once more made an excursion into Cappadocia, and finding Lucullus unable to oppose him, he mastered the country and restored it to Mithridates, who began to recover the whole of the places he had lost.

Pompey succeeded to Lucullus in the command of the army, while at the same time Mithridates was deserted by his prime Minister, who was seduced by the Romans. Many of his chiefs, and his illegitimate son Parnaçes, also followed the same example. The death of Mithridates followed soon after.

Tigranes was equally unfortunate. The young Tigranes, his son, having ingratiated

himself with some of the Armenian chiefs, excited a rebellion against his father, and induced Arshez, the king of Persia, to join him. They marched upon and captured several cities of Armenia, but were unable to take Ardashad, and Arshez not wishing to undertake another siege, returned to his own country. Tigranes' son seeing the forces of his father coming against him, and not being able to oppose him, unwilling also to encounter his anger, fled to Pompey. This general guided by this young prince, entered Armenia, and shortly after made peace between the Romans and Tigranes, reserving for the Romans that part of the countries lying between the Euphrates and the sea, and a part of Cappadocia and Cylicia.

After this peace, Tigranes appointed his son Ardavazt to reign over the territory of Ararat. This event happened in the 33d. year of his reign.

Tigranes, at this time, being advanced in years and seeing the progress made by the Romans, and their preparations for new expeditions, feeling also that his son would be unable to oppose the powerful enemies he had to contend with on all sides; determined at length on making an alliance with Arshez king of Persia. But this measure could only be done by a voluntary relinquishment of that right of precedency, which his father

Ardashes had succeeded in wresting from the Persian Monarchs. On making this sacrifice, Tigranes, agreed also to give his daughter in marriage to Pagur, the son of Arshez.

A consequence of this alliance was that a large army of Persians, headed by Pagur or Bagarus, came to the assistance of Tigranes, who uniting also to it the Armenian army, gave the supreme command to Barzaphran prince of the Rushdunians.

This army set out to Assyria, and invaded Phoenicia; the Romans were unable to stop its progress. In this stage of the successes, Antigonus, son of Aristobulus, made an offer to the princes Barzaphran and Pagur, that if they would dethrone Hyrcanus, the king and Pontiff of Jerusalem, and place him in the government of the city, he would present them with 1000 talents of gold, and 500 handsome women. Barzaphran accepted the offer, and soon after Hyrcanus was delivered to Antigonus, who bit off his ear, that he might no more become High Priest of the Jews. Then the allied army took possession of Jerusalem, where they found immense treasures belonging to Hyrcanus. Antigonus was proclaimed king of the Jews, and Barzaphran carried Hyrcanus with the captive Jews to Tigranes, who assigned them for their dwelling place Semiramaguerd.

## Chapter III.

### Ardavazt the First and Arsham.

### B. C. 39.

At the age of eighty-five years, Tigran king of Armenia died, and Ardavazt t First, his son, succeeded him; he chang the seat of Government from Nisibis in M sopotamia, to Ararat. At the commenceme of his reign he was of a very dissolute n ture and many places in Mesopotamia f into the hands of the enemy. At last he woke to a sense of his folly and repentir set about reconquering his lost possessio But he proved himself a traitor towards A tony, to whom he had promised assistan against the Persians. He broke the trea between the Romans and the Armenia and secretly sent supplies to the Persia The consequence was that the Romans we defeated and with difficulty escaped in Armenia. Antony aware of the treachery his Armenian ally, going into Egypt to Cle patra, maditated vengeance against hi And at last he succeeded in persuading A davazt to meet him in his camp, where had no sooner arrived than Antony caus

him to be arrested and fettered with golden chains. He did the same with the sons of the king, and with the whole of the family retired to Egypt, where they were made a present to queen Cleopatra. Antony afterwards returned into Armenia and appointed his son Alexander king of the country lying between the river Arax and Mesopotamia, that is, Lower Armenia; he gave Upper Armenia, lying on the other side of the Arax, to the king of the Medes, whose daughter Johdabé was espoused to his son Alexander. He intrusted the king of Pontus with Armenia Minor.

When Antony was defeated by Augustus, Cleopatra in the bitterness of her soul, caused king Ardavazt to be beheaded.

Arsham, the brother of Tigranes, on the seizure of his nephew Ardavazt by Antony, assumed the crown of Armenia; but was obliged by the Romans to flee into Persia. On the death of Antony, Arshavir king of Persia, at the head of his army, came into Upper Armenia, drove out the Medes, and restored Arsham to the throne of his ancestors. Arsham then proceeded into Lower Armenia and defeating the Romans, obtained entire possession of that country. But shortly after Upper Armenia was given to Arshavir king of Persia, in consideration of his late good services.

Arsham offering to become tributary t the Romans, if Augustus would liberate th armenian princes his nephews, sons of Ar davazt, Augustus acceded and a treaty wa signed between them. Then Arsham cam into Mesopotamia and held his court at Ni sibis.

When Augustus visited Assyria a secon time, the chiefs of Upper Armenia met him and besought him to deliver their countr from the Persian yoke, offering to accept a their king, Tigranes, surnamed the Little son of the deceased Ardavazt, then residing at Rome. Augustus granted their request and Tigranes was appointed to rule ove them.

Arsham was pleased with this arrange ment. He died at an advanced age, and hi son Abgar succeeded him.

## Chapter IV.

### Abgar, Anané and Sanadrug.

B C. 5.

This prince was celebrated for both perso nal beauty and wisdom. His Armenian sub jects gave him the surname of *Avak-ayr*, o *Great man*; which the Assyrians and Greeks

not being able to pronounce, they changed into Abgar.

In the second year of the reign of Abgar, a decree was issued by Augustus, taxing all the kingdoms and states that acknowledged the Roman dominion, and commanding also that statues of him should be erected in the religious temples of every nation. In the same year it pleased our Blessed Saviour to assume the form of man and to be born of the Holy Virgin. About this time Herod also, king of the Jews, puffed up with pride, sent statues of himself to various nations with a command to place them in the temples near those of Augustus. Abgar refused to comply with this wish, and thereby excited his resentment. Herod sent his nephew Joseph with a mighty force into Armenia; but the invaders were met by Abgar and defeated, and their leader was slain. Herod soon after died.

The Emperor Augustus about this time began to view Abgar with suspicion, on account of some unfavourable reports of him from his enemies at Rome. Abgar repaired to that city to remove the unfavourable impression that had been made on the Emperor's mind. The Emperor received him kindly and admired his wisdom. He stayed there three years and returned afterwards to Armenia.

When Tiberius succeeded to Augustu
took occasion to insult the Armenia
the person of Abgar; the latter therefor
termined to make an effort to shake o
Roman yoke. He built the city of E
and fortified it, and removed his court
Nisibis to this new city. His nephew S
drug was appointed general of the Arm
forces. He counted also upon the help o
Persians. But on the death of Arshavir,
of Persia, quarrels broke out among his
sons, about the succession. Abgar immedi
espoused the cause of Ardashes, the eldes
who was appointed, through the assistar
the Armenians, king of Persia. The othe
brothers were induced to acknowledg
hereditary right of succession, and in re
pense they were endowed with the hig
rank in the kingdom. They were s
Pahlaves from the name of their birth-
Pahl.

After the settlement of these affairs,
gar fell sick, being attacked by elepha
sis, and was obliged to return in has
Edessa. He was accused by Tiberius c
citing the Persians to rebellion. In ord
justify himself, he sent messengers
Anané, a faithful and diligent man, t
Roman general Marinus in Palestine; w
during their stay, they heard all the
ders which were related to them of th

traordinary power of Christ. To gratify their curiosity they went to Jerusalem, witnessing the miracles performed by our Lord, and then returned to Armenia.

Abgar listening to their accounts, became satisfied that this was the son of God, and immediately sent back his messengers to Jerusalem with a letter * to Christ; in which acknowledging him the true and only Son of God, invited him to come to Edessa. He sent also a painter with them, in order that if the Blessed Saviour would not come, he might possess a portrait of him.

The messengers acted according to their instructions, and St. Thomas directed by our Lord, wrote a reply to the letter of Abgar, in which he promised to send a disciple after his resurrection. It is related that the painter in endeavouring to take the features of our Lord, was seen by Christ, who took a handkerchief and passing it over his sacred face, impressed on it his sublime features and gave it to Anané to take to his master **.

According to our Lord's promise, the Apostle Thaddeus was sent by Thomas to king Abgar at Edessa; where the king was

* Of this a translation was made into french by the Mekhitharists and printed at St. Lazaro-Venice. 1868.

** This sacred relic having been brought to Italy, passed to the possession of the Genoese, and is preserved now in Genoa in the Church of St. Bartholomew.

instructed and baptized, together with the people of the city. Atté, a silk mercer, was ordained and appointed bishop of the Edessians. Thaddeus then visited Sanadrug in Inner Armenia and baptized him and his daughter Santukhd; also a great number of the Chiefs and common people. Abgar, three years after his conversion, died, and Anané, his son, assuming the regal power, found an adversary in Sanadrug, the nephew of Abgar, who also reigned at the same time.

Anané (A. D. 34) fixing his government in Edessa, apostatized from the faith he had so lately embraced, and reopened the temples and worshiped idols. Atté, the bishop, had his feet cut off by the king's order, and died. But the king also in giving orders for the reparation of a large marble pillar in the royal mansion, by the falling of the pillar all at once upon him, had his legs broken, and soon after died.

Sanadrug also apostatized from Christianity, and with a large army marched into Mesopotamia, and came to Edessa, promising to respect the religion of the alarmed christian inhabitants. But he massacred cruelly all the males of the house of Abgar, sparing only the females. Thaddeus being in Cappadocia, as soon as he heard of the apostasy of Sanadrug, came back to Armenia; but he was taken and put to death by him, together with his own daughter Santukhd.

At this time the Apostle Bartholomew came into Armenia, bearing with him the portrait of the Virgin Mary, and by his preaching converted many of the people; he was taken by the order of Sanadrug and crucified in the city of Arevbanus. Jude, another of the apostles, was also put to death in the city of Ormi. Many of the disciples of these apostles who were preaching the faith and converting thousands of Armenians, were likewise put to death by order of the king.

Sanadrug rebuilt the city of Nisibis, which had sustained a violent shock of an earthquake and was severely injured. He placed a statue of himself in the middle of the city, holding in one hand a piece of money, meaning that in the rebuilding of the city all his treasury was consumed. He died through a wound he had received at a hunting party, from the hand of one of his attendents, whose arrow struck the king instead of the beast they had enclosed.

## Chapter V.

### Events which happened among the king of Upper Armenia.

B. C. 34 — A. D. 66.

We said that Upper Armenia was red ced by Antony and given to the king of t Medes, and from him passed into the posse sion of Arshavir king of Persia. He appoin ed Ardashias his viceroy. The Armenia applied to the Romans for assistance a they drove out the Persians, settling up the throne Tigranes, surnamed the Litt At his death the Romans sent Erwaz, h brother, to succeed him. This did not plea the Armenians; they placed on the thro another Tigranes, also surnamed the Litt A war ensued between the Romans and t Armenians, and the latter were obliged appoint Abersam, an Ardzrunian prince, the king. On the death of this king, the Pe sians again interfered in the affairs of A menia, and Arshez the youngest son of t king of Persia, was placed on the thron Another war ensued; the Persians were d feated and Arshez expelled. Zeno, son of t king of Pontus, was placed on the thron

under the name of Arshag. On his death the Persians attempted again to subjugate Armenia.

Ardashes king of Persia succeeded in fixing the crown on the head of his eldest son, Arshag. The Emperor Tiberius wrote to Mithridates, brother of Parsman king of the Georgians, to march with his troops into Upper Armenia. Mithridates caused Arshag to be put to death by the servants of the latter, and then marched to the city of Ardashad, where he commenced his reign. The king of Persia tried to reconquer Armenia, but his army was defeated, and a few years elapsed in peace.

Rhamizd, the son of Parsman, came to visit his uncle in Armenia, where he made a great many friends. He returned to his father, with whose consent he invaded Armenia. Mithridates terrified at the opproach of his nephew, fled; but he was taken and put to death with the queen, being suffocated between thick cloths.

Darius, king of Persia, hearing this, invaded Upper Armenia with a large body of troops, and compelled Rhamizd to flee. His brother Dirith was appointed king of Armenia in the city of Ardashad, and being a descendent of the Arsacides, he was gladly received by the Armenians. Rhamizd returned again to Armenia to expel Dirith; but

his army was defeated, and he fled carrying his wife behind him on his horse. She, in a state of pregnancy, much fatigued in flying from the enemy, fainted. Rhamizd determined not to let her fall alive into the hands of their pursuers, stabbed her with his sword, and threw her into a river. Some shepherds drew her out, dressed her wounds, and restored her to her senses; she then was presented to Dirith in Ardashad who ordered her to be treated with the respect due to a queen.

Nero the Roman Emperor, hearing of the success of the Persians, sent a large army under the command of Domitius Corbulo. This general entered Armenia and committed great ravages. Dirith tried to oppose him, but was unable. The city of Ardashad surrendered at discretion to the Romans; but Corbulo having no hope of keeping under his power, put it into fire. He conquered the whole of Upper Armenia and appointed to the government Tigranes the Little, nephew of the first Tigranes the Little.

Dirith retreated into Persia to his brother Darius, who irritated at the successes of the Romans, sent Manej, his general, to invade Upper Armenia. He laid siege to the city of Abaran, otherwise Tigranaguert, where Tigranes the Little held his court. Nero sent Betus with an army to help Ti-

anes. Betus advanced and put all the untry in consternation. Darius on hearing is, hastened into Armenia and defeated Be- s every where. Corbulo advanced to help m, but too late; he met Betus returning om Armenia, having surrendered his aims to Darius. The latter having appoint- again Dirith his brother on the throne, turned to Persia.

On the disastrous defeat of Betus the Ro- ans were overwhelmed with shame. Cor- lo received orders again to attempt the nquest of Armenia. He collected an army, t his real object was not so much to wage ar, as to make peace of such a nature as ould raise the glory of the Romans. After veral embassies were sent on both sides, was agreed that Upper Armenia should main in the hands of the Armenians, but e Emperor should have the power of minating the king.

Dirith then proceeded to Rome to receive e Crown. Nero sent a magnificent chariot the Italian frontier, to convey him to ome, and on his approaching the imperial ty, Nero came out to meet him. Great hon- ar and respect were paid to him. He was rowned by the hands of the Emperor, and en returned to Armenia. This ceremony of he coronation took place A. D. 66., in the ery year in which St. Peter and St. Paul

suffered martyrdom at Rome. He rebuilt the city of Ardashad and established his court there until his death, which happened nine years after, and then the kingdom of Upper Armenia was joined to the Lower under Erwant, the successor of Sanadrug, after a separation of about 85 years.

## Chapter VI.

### Erwant the Second and Ardashes the Second.

### A. D. 68.

Erwant the Second, was Arsacid on the mother's side. He was of a warlike character, but so winning in manner and so generous in disposition, that he was universally beloved. During the life of Sanadrug he had displayed more than ordinary talents, and on the death of that Monarch, instead of one of his sons succeeding him, the chiefs and people with one voice called Erwant to the throne. But immediately after his assumption of the royal power, he stained his hands with innocent blood. Fearing future intrigues from the sons of Sanadrug, he put them all to death, with the exception of the youngest one, named Ardashes, whose nurse

effected his escape to the province of Pers-Armenia, and gave information to Sumpad the Pagradunian. Sumpad took charge of Ardashes, and fled with him to Darius king of Persia. Erwant applied to the latter king requesting him to put the prince to death; but Darius refused to commit such a crime.

Erwant fearing the consequences of Ardashes' claims, endeavoured to strengthen himself by uniting to his kingdom Upper Armenia, whose king Dirith was dead. He dispatched an embassy to the Emperor Vespasian, and with the help of the Romans he succeeded in his intention, and immediately transferred his court from Nisibis to the city of Armavir, in the province of Ararat. He built a city between the rivers Arax and Akhurian, naming it Erwantashad, to which he removed the seat of his government. He built also another city which he called Pakaran, where he appointed Erwaz, his brother, Chief Priest.

He continued thus for eighteen years, accomplishing many emprovements in his kingdom, when Ardashes having attained to manhood, Sumpad his friend and guardian, began to think of restoring him to his lawful inheritance. With the help of the Persian troops, they entered Armenia and met Erwant in his fortified camp, which was surrounded by a wooden wall, and

where he had gathered a large army co
posed principally of Georgeans. Cappa
ceans, and people from Mesopotamia.

Sumpad was a brave man and enjoy
the affection of the Armenians; he was join
by a great many of the Armenian forces
Erwant, and when, at last, in the middle
the battle, Arkam, the Minister of Erwa
joined him with all his men, the slaugh
of Erwant's troops became terrible. Nevertl
less they fought bravely, puting Ardash
life also in danger, who was saved by t
brave Kissak, the son of his nurse, w
fell in this act of devotion.

Night coming on, Erwant's army r
treated, and left the victory in the han
of Sumpad. Erwant fled to Erwantasha
where Sumpad and Ardashes followed hi
and besieged the city. At length the inha
itants surrendered, and Erwant not bei
able to avoid his enemies, hid himself in
private apartment of his palace. But he w
discovered by one of the soldiers of t
young prince, who dashed out his brai
with a blow of his sabre. Ardashes order
him to be buried with all the pompe of
prince.

Ardashes, the son of Sanadrug, was left
undisputed possession of the kingdom
Armenia. He rewarded all those who cc

tributed to his accession to the throne. Sumpad, surnamed the Brave, was named Generalissimo of the Armenians. Arkam had the rank and power of a viceroy, with permission to wear a crown set with rubies, to place rings of gold in his ears, to wear on one of his feet a red shoe, to use at meals a golden spoon and fork, and to drink out of golden vessels. Such were the highest marks of favour conferred by the Armenian monarchs to their subjects, in those days. Ardashes ordered Sumpad to take Pakaran and to put to death Erwaz, brother of Erwant. He did so, and taking all the treasures which the temples contained, brought them to Ardashes, who adding others to them, sent them as a present, to Darius king of Persia.

Ardashes enlarged considerably the city of Ardashad and fortifying it, made it the seat of his government. This prince protected and encouraged commerce. He built bridges over various rivers, constructed numbers of small ships for the transport of merchandise. He encouraged industry; divided the kingdom into districts, setting up pillars of stone to distinguish their bounderies, each having its name engraven on it. He was also a great lover of literature; for he founded many colleges for the instruction of the Armenian youth in astronomy, history, mathematics,

etc., and caused the sciences to be taught in the Armenian language, using the Persian and Syriac characters, the Armenian characters at this period not being invented. The fame of this Monarch spread into Persia and Media, and many of the inhabitants of these countries were induced to leave their native land and to settle in Armenia.

Previous to the commencement of these undertakings, the king was disturbed by the irruption of the tribes of the Alans, joined by the Gheg and Georgian mountaineers. Ardashes attacked and defeated them, and made prisoner the son of the king of the Alans, who retreating, crossed the river Gur, where he rallied his troops. Ardashes arriving near the river halted and prepared to attack the enemy on the following day. The king of the Alans fearing for the safety of his son, sent overtures of peace to king Ardashes, begging him to restore his son. Ardashes refusing to listen to the proposals, Sathinig, the sister of the captive prince, came to the river's bank, and through an interpreter thus addressed the king: "Oh thou powerful and brave Ardashes, who hast conquered the warlike Alans; hear the prayer of the distressed daughter of the king of that people, and restore to him the youth my brother. It would be unbecoming to a hero to take away the life of a fallen foe for

igeance, or to keep him in captivity, and
is to indulge rancour and enmity for ever
ween two brave nations. „
On hearing these wise words, and on
ing the exceedingly beautiful virgin who
is spoke, Ardashes sent Sumpad to the king
the Alans, offering to release the captive
nce and to make peace, if he would give
n in marriage Sathinig his daughter. The
ig of the Alans consented to the proposal;
treaty of peace was signed, and Ardashes
urned to Ardashad with Sathinig his wife,
ere shortly after his marriage was so-
nnly celebrated.

## Chapter VII.

### The exploits of Ardashes' sons.

### A. D. 106.

Ardashes had six sons: Ardavazt, Vroyr,
jan, Diran, Zareh and Tigranes. Ardavazt
is valiant, but proved eventually, proud,
uel and ambitious. Desiring to be next in
gnity to the king, by his machinations
used Arkam, who possessed that honour,
be put to death with all his family. Sum-
ad also, did not escape the envy and malig-
ity of Ardavazt, but he wisely relinquish-

ed his office and retired to the village of Algui, in the province of Demoris, near Assyria. Ardavazt took possession of this appointment also; but he awoke the jealousy of his brothers.

Ardashes observing the dissensions amongst his children, sought to restore union among them, by appointing them to different posts. Vroyr was appointed superintendent of the royal mensions; Majan high-priest, and the other three, chiefs of the army, which was divided into four parts; the eastern, western, northern and southern. The last division was bestowed upon the aged Sumpad, who had by Ardashes' persuasion returned from Demoris.

Ardashes having thus strengthened his kingdom, determined to throw off the Roman yoke. His example was followed by the Persian king. The Emperor Trajan sent against them an army, which appeared first in the regions of Cesarea. Diran who was stationed there, marched with his forces to meet the Romans; but he was put to flight and pursued as far as the valley of Passen, where the fugitives were joined by the eastern and western armies of the Armenians, and marched again against the Romans; but were again completely defeated. Still they attempted once more to arrest the progress of the enemy. In the middle of the fierce engagement,

ad arrived with his division, and turn-
e tide of victory in the young princes
. The Romans were pursued to the
s of Cesarea. Then the Armenians,
the Persians, entered Cappadocia and
e, and laid the country waste with fire
word. Seeing the progress of the Ar-
ns and Persians, the people of Pales-
nd Egypt also revolted against the
ns. But Trajan soon restored tranquill-
those countries, and then prepared to
against the Armenians and Persians.
lashes feeling himself unable to oppose
mperor's forces, set out to meet him
gifts of great value; upon which a
was signed between them.
lashes died after a glorious reign of 41
and his death caused a general mourn-
hroughout Armenia. His funeral was
ficent. The coffin in which his re-
were placed, was of gold, and the
l, in which he was wrapped, of fine
richly embroidered. His head was ad-
with a crown, and a golden shield
by his side. He was borne to the tomb
ilar state, lying on a couch of costly
manship, surrounded by his sons and
t of kin. The troops preceeded his
in their peculiar war-dress, and at
als the trumpets sounded solemn dir-
which rendered the spectacle still more

impressive. On all sides men, women and children vied with each other in their expressions of grief for the loss of this great monarch. At his grave many individuals voluntarily immolated themselves, in token of their devotion and love. Songs were afterwards composed, narrating his great exploits, which were sung by the Armenians. It is said that similar songs were composed on the death of Sumpad, the valiant and wise general, who had contributed so much to the glory of Ardashes.

## Chapter VIII.

### Ardavazt, Diran, Tigranes the Third, and Vagharsh.

### A. D. 129.

Ardavazt, the son of Ardashes, succeeded him on the throne. He exiled all his brothers from his court, appointing them habitations in other provinces, and as he had no offspring, directed Diran to remain with him, that he might succeed to the crown in the event of his decease. His reign was a short; for going one day to hunt bears and wild asses near Mount Ararat, he fell into a great pit and perished. Diran his brother

him, and maintained peace, spend-
me in hunting and other amuse-
sent ambassadors to the Emperor
Pius, to renew the treaty between
ates, and the Emperor in token of
, sent him a royal crown and pur-
and caused medals to be struck,
were two figures, representing
himself and Diran, with the in-
"Rex Armeniis datus,,. After a
wenty-too years, this prince while
one day on the mountains, was
crushed by the fall of an aval-

s the Third, brother of the late
the youngest son of Ardashes, suc-
the throne by the influence of the
ersia. On the death of Antoninus
Armenians and Persians united,
d hostilities against the Romans.
s the governor of Cappadocia alarm-
, consulted the oracle of the god
and being re-assured by it, march-
menia. But he was defeated and
his army almost annihilated. Ve-
was sent by Marcus Aurelius a-
Armenians. But previous to this
ndertook an expedition into Ar-
or, with a view of compelling it to
lge his supremacy. Unfortunately
enamoured of a certain woman,

who, using her power to baffle his proj
of conquest, allured him into a snare, se
his person, and placed him in confinem
Verus succeeded against the enemies of Ro
and Armenia became again its tributa
Having discovered the circumstance of
imprisonment of Tigranes, and commise
ing his condition, Verus procured his
lease, and restored him to his crown,
stowing on him in marriage a Roman vi
named Ropy, by whom Tigranes had
sons. He governed Armenia forty-two y
and on his death, Vagharsh, the son of
first wife, was crowned in the city of
dashad. This prince extended and ado
the village of Vartkes, situated on the r
Kasagh, surrounding it with fortificati
and changing its name to Vagharshabad
sequently transferred there his court.

Armenia being invaded by a hord
Khazirs and Basils, branches of the Sar
tians, Vagharsh immediately attacked
routed them so completely that they flec
the same way they had entered. But Vagh
hurried away by the impetuosity of his
rage, followed them beyond the confine
his territories, and was unfortunately ki
by one of their archers.

## Chapter IX.

### Khosrove the first.

### A. D. 214.

nosrove the first, son of Vagharsh, suc-
ed his father. He collected an army and
ing the great mountain Caucasus, ad-
ed against the Khazirs and Basils, in
r to avenge the death of the late king,
totally subjugated them. Taking hos-
s from them he returned to Armenia,
re he began to improve his kingdom by
building of cities, and the erection of
y fine buildings; at which he forced the
stians whom he found in his dominions,
ork, giving them barely sufficient re-
eration to support life. Many also were
to death.

t this time the Emperor Antoninus Ca-
lla came into Mesopotamia, and from
ce passed into Armenia. Khosrove set
to meet him. After remaining a few
s with the Emperor, Khosrove wished to
rn; but the Emperor having the secret
gn of taking possession of Armenia, pre-
ed him. The Armenians seeing their
g captive, prepared a large force against

the Romans. Antoninus not deeming the m
ment propitious, released Khosrove. B
shortly after sent an army against Armeni
which was defeated and put to flight.

At this time a rebellion broke out among
the people of Persia against Ardavan the
king. The rebels headed by Ardashir, t
son of Sassan, a Persian, marched again
Ardavan, who was defeated and killed, a
Ardashir was crowned king of Persia.
this way the Parthian dynasty in Pers
lost the kingdom, after possessing it for
period of 475 years, and the Sassanian d
nasty was established by Ardashir in t
year of Grace 226. It lasted 427 years.

Khosrove took up the cause of the Pa
thian Ardavan, his relation, and marche
into Persia, to overthrow the usurper Ard
shir. This war lasted several years but en
ed in the defeat of Ardashir who took r
fuge in India.

Ardashir deprived of his kingdom, promi
ed wealth and honours to any one who wou
undertake to assassinate the Armenian kin
A chief of the Surenian Pahlaves, nam
Anag, accepted the offer, and immediate
set out for Armenia, with all his family,
if escaping from Ardashir the usurper. Kho
rove not suspecting his intention, receive
him kindly and gave him honours and ric
es. It was at this time, (A. D. 257), a

in Vagharshabad. where Khosrove had taken up his residence, that Okohé, the wife of Anag, was delivered of a child, which afterwards was to become "the Illuminator„ of the Armenians under the name of St. Gregory.

Anag embracing this opportunity for his design, stabled the king to the heart, after which he fled; but he was pursued by the soldiers, and drowned in the river Araxe. His family also were all massacred, except St. Gregory, who was saved by his nurse Sophia, assisted by her brother Euthalius, both Christians from Cesarea, whither they fled with the child.

Ardashir the Persian, being now master of the situation, came with a large force into Armenia, and put to death all the family of Khosrove, except the little Tiridates who was saved by Ardavazt the Mantagunian and taken first to Cesarea, and afterwards to Rome; where the Emperor put him under the guidance of a celebrated Roman chief. In the same way a daughter also of Khosrove was saved and taken to the fortress of Ani, by Oda, an Amadunian chief.

Ardashir died after reigning 26 years over Persia and Armenia. In the meantime Tiridates, who had grown up, distinguished himself in the Roman army; and when Diocletian declared war against Hirchey, king

of the Goths, Tiridates in single combat took Hirchey prisoner and brought him before the Emperor. Diocletian hearing that Tiridates was the son of the unfortunate Khosrove, directed him to take possession of his kingdom.

While he was distinguishing himself in Rome, Gregory the Illuminator, hearing of his renown, went to him and placed himself under his orders, without disclosing to him his real name and character.

## Chapter X.

### Tiridates and the revival of Christianity in Armenia.

A. D. 286.

Tiridates, accompanied by St. Gregory, came to Cesarea, where he was met by the Armenian chiefs, and crowned king of Armenia by a Pagradunian chief. Then he proceeded to the fortress of Ani, where he found his sister living. Honours were conferred by him upon all those who had connived at their safty. Proceeding to the province of Egueghiatz, in which was a temple of the goddess Anahid (Diana), he offered her sacrifices, and invited St. Gregory to

join him in his idolatry, but he refused; upon which the king tortured him in twelve different ways. At length hearing that he was the son of Anag, the murderer of his father, he ordered him to be taken to the fortress of Ardashad and to be thrown into a deep pit, where he remained fourteen years.

Tiridates, with the help of the Romans, drove out of Armenia Shabuh the king of Persia and son of Ardashir, and governed his country. He maried Ashkhen. the daughter of the king of the Alans, by whom he had a son, Khosrove the Little.

It was at about this time that the Ripsimian Nuns entered Armenia from the Roman states and shortly after suffered martyrdom.

Tiridates and many of the Armenian chiefs, were aflicted with a sore disease. Khosrovetukhd, the king's sister, receiving divine revelation, caused St. Gregory to be released from the pit, in order that he might healé the king and those who were afflicted in the same way. By his preaching of the Gospel, he converted the whole nation to Christianity, and going to Cesarea he was consecrated Archbishop of Armenia, by Leontius the metropolitan, in the year 302.

On the news reaching him that the Emperor Constantine was a convert, Tiridates, together with St. Gregory, undertook a jour-

ney to Rome, where an alliance was solemnly agreed upon between the two nations, and St. Gregory was consecrated Pontiff of all Armenia, by the Pope St. Silvester. On their return to Armenia, Tiridates was obliged to assist the Aghuans against their invaders, and then to turn his victorious arms against Shabuh the Persian king, who was forced at length to make peace.

At this period of our history, A. D. 325, the Council of Nice was held, to which the Emperor Constantine invited Tiridates with St. Gregory; but unable to go, they sent in their stead St. Arisdagues, who brought back to Armenia the creed of the Fathers.

St. Gregory retiring into Upper Armenia, to a cavern of mount Sebuh, died there, and Arisdagues, his youngest son, succeeded him, in the pontifical chair. He was killed by one of the Armenian chiefs, whom he had admonished for his conduct. Vertanes his eldest brother succeeded him.

Many of the Armenian chiefs relaxed from the strict observance of Christian piety, and did not regard the pious admonitions of their pontiff and of their king Tiridates. The latter perceiving the inefficacy of his exhortations, retired from the government and secluded himself in the same place where St. Gregory had died. The chiefs then assembled together and tried to induce him to

irn, promising to amend their lives. But knowing their evil dispositions, refused to ime his crown; at which they in revenge ioned him in the 85th. year of his age. reigned 56 years.

## Chapter XI.

### )SROVE THE SECOND. DIRAN THE SECOND.

### A. D. 342.

n the death of Tiridates the Aghuans reb- l, and killed St. Gregoris, the eldest of St. Vertanes, who had been appoint- ırchbishop over them. Many other re- ions broke out also among the Armenian fs, which made Armenia the scene of y tumults, contentions and rebellion. ome of the better disposed chiefs came ɜt. Vertanes, and having consulted with , appointed Khosrove, the son of the de- ɜed Tiridates, king of Armenia; and to ler his sway successful, they applied to Romans for assistance. Upon which the peror Constantine, son of Constantine the ɜat, sent a large force under the command Antiochus, steward of his house, with a ɜer, kingly garments and a crown, for

the purpose of investing Khosrove with sovereign power.

Khosrove immediately after his coronation organized an army, which, together with the Greecian forces, he divided into two divisions and sent them against the rebels, whom he subdued and the country was once more at peace. He then began to take delight in hunting, for which he planted a large forest near the river Azad, which he called Khosrovaguerd. Near it, on an eminence, he laid the foundation of a city and named it Duin, whither he removed his court from Ardashad.

While Khosrove was engaged in building his new city, the northern nations, incited by Shabuh, king of Persia again rebelled and invaded Armenia at the head of 20,000 men. Khosrove hastened to meet them, but he was defeated and obliged to flee into the country of Zophs. In the mean time Shabuh and Sanadrug, a rebel, at the head of the invaders, advanced to the city of Vagharshabad, to which they laid siege. Whilst they were pushing on their operations here, Pakarad and Vahan, two generals of king Khosrove, who had the command of the Armenian army, advanced towards the invaders, gave them battle, and proving victorious, drove them far away beyond the fortress of Oshagan, into a wild stony tract of

ıtry difficult to traverse. Seeing their dan-
and finding no other escape, they deter-
ed to make another stand against the
orious Armenians. A still more obstinate
le was faught, in which the giant lea-
of the barbarians was killed by Vahan
Armenian general, and great slaughter
made in their number. The victorious
ıenians entered the country of Zophs,
ıre they were met by the king; the
ınd upon which the enemy was defeated,
given to Vahan, the general, and various
ıpensations to the other generals en-
ed in the combat Khosrove a short time
r died, and was interred near his father
he city of Ani.

The Armenian chiefs following the ad-
ı of St. Vertanes, elected Diran, son of
deceased king, to the crown of Armenia,
D. 353). St. Vertanes took him to Con-
ıtinople, and presented him to the Em-
ɔr Constantine, as chosen by the Arme-
ns to succeed Khosrove his father.

Shabuh, the Persian king, determined to
ɛ this opportunity to obtain the sov-
ignty of Armenia for one of his own fam-
. He gave an army to Nerseh his step-
ther and sent him to Armenia. But Ar-
ıvir the Gamsaragan was the generalis-
ıo of the Armenians and had charge of
ı country; he marched against the Per-

sians, and defeated them in a second battle. In the same way he drove out also the Northern nations who had made an inroad into Armenia, by the province of the Aghuans.

Diran returned from Constantinople and assumed the regal authority under the name of Diran the Second; he made peace with Shabuh, to whom he paid a tribute equal to that which he paid the Emperor.

Diran, unlike his father, had very effeminate manners; he had three sons: Ardashes, the father of Dirith; Arshag, who eventually succeeded to the throne; and Tiridates, who was the father of Gunel and was killed in Constantinople. At this time also St. Vertanes died and was succeeded in the Pontifical chair by Hussig, his youngest son; who having been previously married, had two sons, Bab and Athanagines.

At this time (A. D. 361), the Emperor Julian, the Apostate, marched against the Persians, who, on his approach to the Euphrates, destroyed the bridges which had been constructed over that river, and hindered the advance of his army. Julian wrote to Diran for assistance. The Armenian king, unmindful of his treaty with Shabuh, attacked the Persians and routed them, and rebuilt the bridges, thus affording Julian an unmolested passage over the Euphrates. He also gave the Emperor a division of his army, and

in token of his good faith, he gave into his hands as hostages, his third son Tiridates with his wife and children, and the only child of Arshag his own eldest son, who had lately died. He retained by him his second son, Arshag, to succeed him on the throne. Julian sent the hostages to Constantinople, and as a mark of his favour, gave his own portrait to Diran, requesting him to place it on the eastern side of one of the churches. Diran in order to comply with the wish of the Emperor, was hanging the picture in one of the churches, when Hussig, the pontiff, arriving there, exhorted him to desist from his design. But the king being determined, the holy pontiff indignant at the sacrilege, snatched the picture from his hands, and throwing it on the ground, trampled it to pieces. Diran fearing the Emperor's vengeance, in a fit of violent rage, caused Hussig to be scourged so severely, that he expired under the punishment.

Daniel, a Syrian, was appointed in his place; but on his reproving the king for the unjust death of Hussig, he was ordered to be strangled. Then the Armenians conferred the pontifical dignity on Parnerseh or Paren, a priest from the convent of St. Johannes Garabied, in the city of Ashdishad.

When Zora, the Armenian general, who accompanied Julian in his expedition, heard

of the violence committed by Diran, he determined to separate himself from the Roman troops. He drew off the whole of his division, and retired to the province of Demoris, to await the result. Julian wrote to Diran saying: "If Zora has acted thus without your knowledge, you should destroy him and all his race,,. The king having got Zora into his power, caused him and the whole of his family to be slain.

On the death of Julian, Valentinian his successor, proposed peace to the Persians. Shabuh not liking the terms, marched towards Greece. On approaching the frontiers of Armenia, he recollected the injury he had sustained from Diran, and determined to take vengeance. He invited Diran to a friendly conference, and on their meeting, he reproached him for his treachery and ordered his eyes to be plucked out. Shabuh then appointed Arshag, the son of Diran, to reign over the Armenians.

## Chapter XII.

### Arshag the Second.

### A. D. 363.

Arshag the Second, ascended to the throne
: Armenia, under the protection of the
ing of Persia. Instead of studying the wel-
re of his subjects he began a career of vice
ıd licentiousness. In the second year of his
ign, Parnerseh the pontiff died. The Ar-
enians then invited Nierses, son of Atha-
ıgines, a son of Hussig, who was living in
ɔnstantinople, to return to Armenia; and
ı his doing so, he was invested with the
ɔntifical dignity. This holy man having
ɔved his zeal for his high office, and having
ɛen benefactor of the whole nation, king
rshag convened a meeting, at which he
ɛtermined to constitute him high pontiff or
atriarch of the Armenians; and thence
rw:rd the high pontiffs of Armenia were
ɔ longer obliged to receive consecration at
ɛsarea, that ceremony being performed by
ıe Armenian bishops.

Valentinian sent ambassadors to Arshag
prevail upon him to renounce obedience
the Persians and to place himself under

the protection of the Greeks. But Arshag drove the ambassadors away from his court with disgrace, and determined to rule his kingdom independent of every power; he ceased to pay tribute to both Greeks and Persians. Valentinian enraged at his ambassadors' disgrace, seized Tiridates, Arshag's brother, who was a hostage in Constantinople, and put him to death. He also ordered his general Theodosius to march into Armenia and avenge the insult he had suffered. Arshag alarmed at this news, applied to St. Nierses for assistance. The Saint thereupon met Theodosius and persuaded him to suspend hostilities, and then proceeding to Constantinople, succeeded in appeasing the Emperor Valentinian, who on the departure of the Saint delivered to him the hostages of Arshag's family. These were Dirith, the grandson of Diran, and the family of the deceased Tiridates, whom the Emperor had put to death. Valentinian also gave a young virgin named Olympia, connected with the imperial family, in marriage to Arshag whose wife was lately dead. He also bestowed great favours on Gunel, the son of the deceased Tiridates, in token of his sorrow for the death of his father, appointing him to the dignity of consul, and giving him immense treasures. These favours excited the envy of Dirith, which, however he

pressed until a fit opportunity should
ur to gratify it.

Gunel arriving in Armenia hastened to
a visit to his grandfather, the blind Di-
, who lived in retirement near the foot
Mount Arakadz; who on hearing the trag-
l end of Tiridates, exclaimed: "Ah, I am
cause of his death, for I yielded him as
hostage to Julian, and I am now justly
nished for it with blindness.,, Diran be-
wed the whole of his personal property
his grandson Gunel, who, according to
wish, remained with him. Shortly after
married Parantzem, the daughter of An-
g, the Chief of the Sunies.

The marriage was celebrated with the
atest splendour and the bridegroom was
digal of his gifts to all the Chiefs and
ier guests assembled on the occasion, by
ich he became extremely popular in that
rt of the country. It was costumary in
menia, on the marriage of the king, or of
y member of the royal family, for the no-
s to place their sons as pages in the court
the palace. On the occasion of the mar-
ge of Gunel the custom was observed,
d the children of the Chiefs, who assisted
this manner to give pomp to the festival,
re adorned by him with the richest vest-
nts, so that they outshone even those in
endance on the king. For which Gunel

rose st ill higher in the estimation and favo of the chiefs.

Dirith, to gratify his jealous maligni against Gunel, associated with himself miscreant named Vartan Mamigonian, a acq uainted the king with all the trifling ci cumstances we have related above, chargi his relation with having a design on t crown. The king giving credit to the ta banished his innocent nephew from Arar Gunel then took up his abode in the roy city of Zarishad.

Diran, seeing this unjust persecution, se a message to Arshag, his son, severely r primanding him for it. Upon which Arsh sent private directions to the chamberlai of his father and caused him to be strangl

Shortly after Arshag was hunting n mount Ararat, and was so much elated the sport and the number of animals w which the mountain abounds, that he clared none of his predecessors had enj the diversion in such perfection as him Dirith and Vartan took occasion to in him that his nephew Gunel had a gr number and variety of beasts on his pos ons, and had a more extraordinary v hunting, than any king of Armenia ev This excited the jealousy of Arshag with the design of killing Gunel, w him to make preparations, as he was

to meet him on his property for hunting; and immediately, without giving time for his dispatch to arrive, he set out to meet Gunel in order that finding him unprepared, he might kill him.

On his arrival his envy was excited to the highest degree, when he saw the beauty of the fields, the abundance of game, and the splendid preparations of Gunel to receive him. Arshag then privately directed Vartan to shoot Gunel, as if undesignedly, with an arrow, during the chase. Which having been done, the unfortunate Gunel dropped from his horse and immediately died. They then began to lament and express every external mark of sorrow for the unfortunate accidant.

Nevertheless the real circumstances soon became known, and reaching the ears of St. Nierses, he pronounced an anathema upon the three guilty ones. But the king far from shewing contrition for his crime, married Parantzem, the wife of the murdered Gunel, although his queen Olympia was still living. Parantzem was a woman of great beauty, but of a licentious and revengeful nature. She caused the death of Olympia by putting poison into the Holy Sacrament, which was administered to her by a vile priest, and committed many other crimes, which made the holy pontiff Nierses quit the

city of Vagharshabad and retire into a convent, where he lived in retirement.

Shabuh, the king of Persia, who had not forgotten Arshag's desertion of him for the Greek Emperor, now prepared to punish him. Arshag on being made acquainted with the hostile intentions of king Shabuh, sent Dirith and Vartan with large presents, to appease him and make a treaty of peace Shabuh, accepting the terms, invited Arshag to accompany him in his expedition against the Greeks. Arshag not daring to go himself, sent to Shabuh a detachment of Armenian troops; and thinking that Dirith and Vartan had misrepresented him to Shabuh, he ordered them to be put to death.

Shabuh, in his advance against the Greeks arriving at Tigranaguerd wished to enter the city, in order to buy provisions for his army. But the governor Antovg, the father of Prantzem, who was the chief of the Sun and general of the eastern division of the Armenian army, shut the gates against Shabuh. The Persian king then left the country vowing to avenge the insult on his return. And he did so. Having taken prisoners great number of Greeks, he promised to release them, if they would fight and take the city. They were succesful, and that strong city which was built by Tigranes the Great was taken and burned, and all the in-

itants slain, except a very small number who were spared by the king's order, and taken prisoners to Persia. Antovg also, the governor, was burned in his house.

Arshag, after his reconciliation with Shabuh, commenced building a city near the Mount Ararat, which he called Arshagavan. Desiring to people it as quickly as possible, he proclaimed that whoever would take up their habitation in his new city, should be free from the arm of justice, and should not be amenable to any tribunal for any crime.

Immediately the city was stocked with numerous debtors, murderers, robbers and outlaws from society of all descriptions.

This colony of miscreants was a great annoyance to the Armenian chiefs, for their very servants, after plundering them, could flee there and be secure from the penalties of the law; but finding that their own sovereign was deaf to their request that he should annul the privileges of the inhabitants, they applied to the Persian king Shabuh to destroy Arshagavan and deliver them from Arshag their king.

Shabuh, delighted at the invitation, sent a body of troops into Armenia to take Arshag prisoner and to act according to the directions of the Armenian chiefs. Arshag took refuge in the fortress of Ani, in Upper Armenia; but the Persian general besieged

and soon captured it. The king, however, made his escape to the regions about Caucasus, where he was protected by the Georgians. The Persians not finding the king, seized the royal treasures, with the embalmed bodies of several of the former kings of Armenia, which had been kept there in vaults prepared for, that purpose, and then returned to their own country. The Armenian chiefs with their troops, marched against Arshagavan, took it and slaughtered all the inhabitants indiscriminately, with the exception of sucking babes, whom they took away captives. St. Nierses on hearing of this event, immediately went to the irritated chiefs, took the babes from them and gave them to the care of nurses. He caused the Persians also to restore to the nation the bodies of their kings, which had been taken by the Persian general from the fortress of Ani.

Arshag was furious at the destruction of his city. He assembled the Georgian troops, and with several other Armenian forces, marched against the rebel chiefs. Nerseh Gamsaragan was at the head of the party against the king, whom he met with the troops of the Armenian chiefs, and a well contested battle ensued; many fell on each side, and neither party could claim the victory. The next day both armies retreated

scene of the combat to recruit their
While they were preparing for a
onflict, a body of Grecian troops,
ɜ command of Theodosius, made its
ce on the frontiers of Armenia, sent
mperor Valens, the successor of Va-
, in revenge for the assistance the
ıs had given to Shabuh against the
Arshag finding himself between the
ınd his rebellious chiefs, and having
ıs of escape, sent a messenger to
entreating him to pacify his chiefs
ıve him from the hands of the Em-

ıs at first would not hear him, but at
ɔnsented to be a mediator between
n the king's promising the chiefs
t period to employ himself in reg-
and improving the country. Nier-
ɜeded in pacifying both parties, ex-
ı of the chiefs, Merujan, chief of the
ans, and his brother-in law, Va-
Mamigonian, who leaving their
went to Persia and abjured their

liately after Nierses went to Theo-
ıd entreated him to desist from his
ı of ravaging the country. He paid
ute and sent hostages chosen from
of the chiefs, Bab, the son of Ar-
ing one of them, and persuaded him

to go back to his own master. Theodosius wished Nierses also to accompany him with a letter of king Arshag to the Emperor. Nierses consenting to the proposal, appointed his deacon Khat, whom he had lately consecrated bishop, to preside over the church during his absence, and went with Theodosius to Constantinople. The Emperor not approving the line of conduct which Theodosius had adopted, refused to see Nierses, whom he sent into banishment, ordering the hostages to be put to death. Nevertheless, through the supplications of Theodosius they were spared.

Nierses, however, had started on board ship to the place of his banishment. But the ship was caught in a violent storm and dashed to pieces near the shores of a desert island, where Nierses and the whole of the crew succeeded in getting safe ashore. But for eight months they were obliged to live on roots and fish. Nierses afterwards was released from banishment and returned to Constantinople.

In the meanwhile Arshag finding himself free from his enemies, broke the covenant he had solemnly made with his chiefs and sought to retaliate on them the mortifications he had formerly suffered. He succeeded in killing some by treachery, and the Gamsaragan race was almost annihilated. One

r, however, escaped the fate of his nd fled to Greece with his wife and is. The holy Khat admonishing the r his cruelty, was ordered to be im-ly stoned. But he was saved by the s of his son-in-law, who sword in tacking the executionners, rescued the ishop, with whom they retired to ovince.

## Chapter XIII.

### Captivity of Arshag.

### A. D. 369.

uh at length, perhaps instigated by efs of Armenia, sent a large army a-Arshag. All the Armenian chiefs im-ely joined it, and Arshag, without fled to a fortress on a hill, where, he his enemies could not approach him. was surrounded, and unable to escape, ermined to deliver himself to the general, with a view of going to . This being done, some of his chiefs ng the fallen condition of their mon-ould not help commiserating him; the Mamigonian and Trastamaden, ward of the royal household, deter-

mined to accompany him to Shabuh, king of Persia.

When they arrived in Persia, Shabuh ordered that every respect should be paid to king Arshag, and gave up a palace for his residence and that of his court. He immediately after obliged Arshag to write to Parantzem, to join him in Persia. A detachment also was sent by him to Armenia, with an order to the chiefs and nobles, that they should proceed with their queen to the Persian capital.

The Armenian chiefs alarmed at this order, sent to Shabuh begging that they might be excused. Shabuh remaining inflexible, they became exasperated, and furiously attacking the troops he had sent for their escort, put them to flight. They then quitted Armenia and retired into different countries. One of them, Varaztad, an Arsacid, went to Constantinople, and was appointed to a post in the imperial palace.

Queen Parantzem also, taking the treasures of the royal palace, in company with Mushegh, a Mamigonian, retired to a strong fortress, and wrote from there to Bab, the royal prince, who was a hostage at Constantinople, to endeavour, by means of Nierses and the Greeks, to obtain the restoration of the almost ruined kingdom of his father.

Shabuh, angry at all these events in Armenia, caüsed Arshag to be loaded with hains and transported to Khujastan, and here placed in the castle of Oblivion, where nce immurred, no one was ever heard of gain. Then Shabuh sent an army into Armenia, headed by Merujan the Ardzrunian, nd Vahan the Mamigonian, the two apotates. They found the country in a deploable state of anarchy, and going directly o the fortress where Parantzem had taken efuge, laid siege to it. After several atacks, seeing that it was impregnable by rms, they turned the siege into a blockade. The inhabitants at length, not obtaining reief from Bab, to whom the queen had writen, opened the gates and surrendered. Evry thing in the castle was plundered. The nhabitants, with the queen, were taken to Assyria, and with various species of torture ompelled to abjure their faith. Mushegh made his escape to Constantinople, and related all these horrors to Nierses.

Merujan and Vahan returned again from Assyria to Armenia and spread destruction every where. Arshag, finding himself in hopeless bondage, and being informed of all the dreadful events that had lately occured in Armenia, was driven to despair, and seizing a sword, he plunged it into his breast and expired, after a reign of eighteen years.

Shabuh then, sent Merujan again into Armenia with a large army and with a number of Magi, the ministers of the Persian religion, promising him the sovereignty of it, if he succeeded in subduing the chiefs and in forcing the Armenians to embrace the Persian religion. A dreadful persecution ensued, when people, priests and bishops, were exiled and put to death. All the books which he found in the country written in the Greek character, he caused to be burnt, and issued an order that no Armenian should learn that language; they were merely permitted to use the Persian characters in their writings.

The Magi, accompanied by executioners were distributed among the towns and villages where they forced the inhabitants to forsake their religion, giving them the only alternative of instant death.

The news of all these horrors reaching Constantinople, St. Nierses and the Armenians, who had taken refuge there, were plunged into the deepest sorrow. The holy pontiff went to the Emperor and earnestly besought him to appoint Bab, the son of Arshag, king of Armenia.

The Emperor unable to withstand the supplications of the Saint, invested Bab with the insignia of royalty, and ordered Terentius, his general, to march with an army

into Armenia, to put the prince in possession of his lawful inheritance. The Armenian chiefs gathered together their forces and came unanimously joined Terentius, and thus all prepared to fight for their faith and their king.

## Chapter XIV.

### The reign of Bab.

### A. D. 370.

Bab, assisted by a large body of Greek troops, advanced into Armenia. Merujan, without waiting to meet him, fled into Persia, leaving orders that the governors of the castles, where he had confined the wives of the chiefs, who had taken refuge in Greece, should be hanged upon the battlements, in derison of their husbands. He also forbade their bodies to be removed until they were devoured by the birds of the air, or become so putrid as to fall to pieces.

The Armenian chiefs thereupon attacked first these castles, and put the garrisons to the sword, delivering many who were still kept in irons, and burying the women. Then advancing forward, they expelled the Persians from the country.

Merujan informed Shabuh of all this, who becoming exceedingly angry, dispatched a messenger to Ardashir his son, directing him to assemble, without delay, the whole force of Persia, and send them under the command of Merujan to Armenia. This was done, and the Persians, in great number, advanced to meet the Armenians and their allies. But Bab and Terentius also applied to the Emperor Valens for more troops, which being granted, they marched all together toward Mount Nebad. There the Persians advanced to meet them, and soon the struggle began with great fury. The Persians fought most undauntedly, and for some time there was no perceptible advantage obtained by either side. The noise and uproar increased, and torrents of blood deluged the field.

Sherkir, king of the Legs, an ally of the Persians and a very powerful man, succeeded in repulsing the Armenians opposed to him. But the Gamsaragan Sbantarad advancing against him, charged his division, and breaking through the thick array of arms and men, came up to Sherkir, and with a blow of his sword brought him to the ground, and thus succeeded in putting his troops to flight. Many other gallant exploits were performed by the other Armenian chiefs, amongst whom Sumpad, a Pagradunian general, turning the left wing of the

Persians, where Merujan was commanding, obliged them to leave the field in confusion. Merujan's horse being wounded, he could not keep up with his companions. Sumpad observing this, pursued him with the utmost ardour, and overtook him at the edge of the thickets of Gokayovid. He tied his hands behind him, intending to carry him to the allied camp; but reflecting that St. Nierses would probably set him at liberty, he changed his design. Looking around, he observed at a short distance the tents of the inhabitants of Gokayovid. Near them was a large fire, round which a great number of people were gathered watching a spit on which they had placed some meat to be dressed Sumpad approaching the fire, took the meat from the spit, and bending it into the shape of a crown, put it into the fire to heat. When it was red hot, he took it with a pair of tongs from the fire, and placing it upon the head of the apostate, said: "You aspired to a crown; I as a Pagradunian noble, crown you at this moment king of Armenia,,. Thus perished the wicked Merujan. Sumpad then returned to the camp, and further hostilities ceased. Bab was now the undisputed possessor of the throne (A. D. 371).

However, he proved himself of little better than his father; for he gave himself up to the guidance of his passions. Nierses behold-

ing the ill conduct of the king, endeavou
ed by very gentle means to lead him ba
to the paths of virtue. But his admonitio
failing to produce the effect he looked f
he assumed a higher tone of rebuke; whi
irritating the king, he caused the pontiff
be secretly put to death by poison. Th
was the most brilliant light of the chur
extinguished, after having occupied the po
tifical throne eight years.

King Bab observing the general mou
ning throughout the nation on the death
Nierses, raised to the pontifical dignity Sh
hag, of the family of Albianus, the bishop
Hark, on account of the universal reveren
and esteem in which he was held.

Bab after the death of St. Nierses, gr
daily more unprincipled, and at length, li
tening to the suggestions of creatures un
ble to appreciate the value of a virtuous so
ereign, resolved to rebel against the Emp
ror. He dismissed Terentius with his troo
and hastened to collect an army. Terenti
informing the Emperor of these events, r
ceived orders to attack the ungrateful kin
the Emperor sent him also the troops
Cappadocia. Terentius took the Armeni
forces by surprise and completely rou
them. Bab, who did not think that Ter
tius was so near, and consequently had
ken no measures to provide for his perso
safety, was taken prisoner and killed.

## Chapter XV.

### Varaztad, Vagharshag the Second, Khosrove the Third.

### A. D. 374.

After the death of Bab, the Emperor appointed an Arsacian called Varaztad, to be king of Armenia; who, as we have related, at the time of the flight of the Armenian chiefs from the tyranny of Shabuh, took refuge in Constantinople, and was appointed to a situation in the Emperor's household.

This Varaztad was of a dauntless mind, herculean strength and admirable address in the use of arms. He more then once bore off the prize in wrestling at the Olympic games, and in the public arena he frequently overcame alone the most furious beasts of prey, such as lions, tigers, etc. In a battle between the Greeks and Longobardians he fought five persons at once, and slew them without receiving the smallest injury.

Having accepted the crown of Armenia, he proceeded toward his kingdom with a body of Grecian troops. Arriving on the confines of Taranaghi, he came upon a band

of Syrian robbers, who had long infested the country. He immediately attacked them, and on their flying, he pursued them to the river Euphrates, which they crossed by means of the trunk of a tree, which they destroyed behind them. Varaztad arriving near the banks of the river and finding no boats for his troops, with amazing agility leaped across the river, which was twenty-two cubits broad, and pursuing the robbers with double ardour, forced them to surrender.

He proceeded then to Ararat, performing similar acts of valour. He expelled the Persians whom he found there, and took possession of the kingdom.

The Greek generals who accompanied him to Armenia, desiring to control him, he grew impatient and determined to abjure his allegiance to the Emperor. He wrote, therefore, to Shabuh for assistance, promising to him the same tribute. Shabuh consenting, a treaty was made between them. But before assistance reached him, the Greek generals, who had discovered the secret intelligence, gave notice to the Emperor, who summoned Varaztad to proceed immediately to Constantinople. Unable to do otherwise, he set out to meet the Emperor, with the firm intention of denying every thing. But the Emperor would not even grant him an interview; he ordered him to be loaded with

chains and banished him to the isle of Thule, in the northern ocean. He reigned about two years.

The Emperor Theodosius the Great, seeing how rebellious the Armenian kings became as soon as their kingdom prospered, resolved to appoint two kings at one time over the country. With this view. he appointed the two sons of Bab, Arshag and Vagharshag, who were hostages in Constantinople, and still in their minority.

Arshag the Third, fixed his residence (A. D. 380.) in Duin; Vagharshag the Second, in Eriza, in the province of Egueghiatz. Vagharsag maried the daughter of Isaac, the Pagradunian, and died shortly after.

About this time Theodosius, being deeply employed in the affairs of the western part of his kingdom, appointed his eldest son Arcadius as his colleague, and gave him the government of the eastern nations. Shabuh on this occasion sent an embassy to the young prince to negotiate peace. A treaty was then made, by which Armenia was divided into two parts; the western, extending from Armenia Minor and Mesopotamia to the limits of Daron, was to be henceforth tributary to the Greeks; and the eastern, which was far more populous and fruitful, comprehending all the country lying to the eastward of Mount Ararat, was ceded for ever to the Persians.

It was then the second year of the reign of king Arshag the Third; he held a consultation with the chiefs, and quitted that part of the country, which was ceded to the Persians, transferring his court to Eriza, under the protection of the christian Emperor. The Armenian chiefs leaving behind all their possessions, accompanied him. Shabuh much hurt at this desertion of his part of Armenia, endeavoured to entice them back by appointing Khosrove the Third, a branch of the Arsacides, king over it; and he succeeded in persuading several to return to their homes.

A quarrel happened between Arshag and Khosrove. The former having given orders for his treasures to be transferred from the fortress of Ani to the country of Zophs, they were taken by Khosrove's men and carried to him. Arshag seeing that all his representations were useless, and that his treasures would not be given back to him, collected his army and advanced against Khosrove, who came to meet him. A battle was fought, but Arshag was defeated and nearly taken prisoner. He made however his escape, and soon after died. After his death the Emperor did not appoint a king to rule over Armenia, but sent an officer to be general of the army and chief of the nobles residing in that part. The Armenian chiefs being dis-

pleased with this arrangement, renounced further obedience to the Emperor and went over to eastern Armenia, where they were kindly received by Khosrove. Shortly after Khosrove wrote to Arcadius and solicited the government of western Armenia, promising to pay tribute to the same amount as he payed to the Persians; and on Arcadius consenting, he thenceforward ruled over the whole of Armenia.

## Chapter XVI.

### Vramshabuh.

### A. D. 390.

A short time after this event, several of the chiefs being at enmity with Khosrove, went to Shabuh and accused their king of intending to rebel against the Persians. Shabuh immediately ordered Khosrove to repair to Persia. Khosrove exasperated at this message, drove the messengers from his court with disgrace, and sent to Arcadius for assistance; but Arcadius refused him any aid.

Shabuh sent Ardashir his son with an army, who proceeding to Armenia and finding Khosrove without assistance, dethroned him, put him in chains, and appointed

Vramshabuh, his brother, king of Armenia (A. D. 392).

Vramshabuh, shewed himself in all things obedient to the Persians, in consequence of which he enjoyed great tranquillity during his reign. In his time Shabuh died and Ardashir his son succeeded him; but he also dying soon after, Vramcurmanshah was appointed king of Persia. He conceived a friendship for Vramshabuh, and set at liberty his brother Khosrove, who was still in chains in the castle of Oblivion.

During the reign of Vramshabuh Armenia began to enjoy a little tranquillity. It was at this time that St. Mesrob became famous for sanctity and wisdom. Until this period the Armenians were accustomed to use the characters of other nations in their writings; but St. Mesrob applied himself to invent an Armenian alphabet, and he succeeded. This invention took place in the year 406, in the seventeenth year of the pontificate of St Isaac, then pontiff of the Armenians, and the fifteenth of the reign of Vramshabuh. Learning began to flourish in Armenia, many schools were founded, and the Armenian youth were taught their language by means of their own alphabet. Thus the Persian division of Armenia became celebrated for knowledge of every description. St. Isaac translated the Old Tes-

tament into Armenian from the Syriac, the New Testament having been translated by St. Mesrob.

Vramshabuh died six years after the invention of the Armenian characters, having reigned in piety and peace for twenty-one years. He left a son ten years of age; the chiefs thinking a child was unfit to ascend the throne, sent St. Isaac to Hazguerd, king of Persia, entreating him to reappoint their ancient monarch Khosrove to the crown. Hazgeurd granted their wish, but Khosrove died a year after. About the same time also Hamazasb the Mamigonian, son-in-law of St. Isaac, who was the generalissimo of Armenia, died leaving three sons: Vartan, Hemayak, and Hamazasbian.

Hazguerd wishing to alienate the Armenians from the christian faith, and estrange their chiefs from the Greeks, would not appoint an Armenian king in the place of Khosrove. He, therefore, sent his son Shabuh to rule over them, giving him instructions to tempt the Armenian chiefs, and to endeavour to divert them from the strict observance of the laws of their faith. The chiefs received the prince with reluctance, and on all occasions treated him with the greatest contempt. Four years after Hazguerd fell dangerously ill, and Shabuh leaving Armenia, hastened to visit his father. Never-

theless he left a large body of Persian
ordering their general, to seize the Ar
chiefs and nobles and carry them to
But on his arrival at Ctesiphon, H
died, and Shabuh himself was murd
the deceased king's servants. A fev
after Vram the Second succeeded
crown of Persia.

At the order given by Shabuh to
sian general for their seizure, the A
chiefs assembled an army, under tl
mand of Nerseh of Shirag, and a
the Persians, routed them and kill
general. Then they separated, each
into his stronghold, and living inde
of all control. The Persian division c
nia remained in the greatest anai
three years. Vram also, the Persia
seeking revenge, terribly harassed
habitants of the country. Upon wl
Isaac the pontiff took refuge, togetl
St. Mesrob, in the Greek division o
nia, where his grandson Vartan
pointed, by the Emperor Theodosius,
lissimo of the Armenian troops b
to his division.

## Chapter XVII.

### Ardashir or ardashes the Last.

### A. D. 422.

Vram, the king of Persia, finding that his division of Armenia was nearly depopulated, relaxed his severity; and proposing terms of peace to the almost expatriated chiefs, promised to appoint them a king in the person of Ardashes, the son of Vramshabuh, their former monarch. The Armenian chiefs gladly accepted the terms; Ardashes assumed the crown under the name of Ardashir. But soon he became odious to his chiefs from his effeminacy and sensuality. They, at length, relinquishing all hope of his reform, went to St. Isaac and besought him to join with them in soliciting from Vram the deposition of Ardashir, and the appointment of a Persian governor in his stead. St. Isaac rejected their proposal with indignation. They then proceeded to Vram, and complained both of Ardashir and the Saint. The Persian king immediately sent for the accused. When they arrived in Persia, Vram spake privately to Ardashir and acquainted him with the accusation laid a-

gainst him; at which the young king re
that he was entirely innocent, as h
never been found remiss in protectin
country, or in dealing justice to his sul
But it was their custom to hate their
archs, and in persecuting him they
followed their usual habits.

Vram afterwards confronted Ardashi
his accusers, and though the Armenian
urged much in his defence, nevert
Vram wishing to have the entire poss
of Armenia was disposed to condemn
And indeed he was determined to do
he heard the Armenian chiefs saying: "
occasion have we for a king? Let a P
governor come and rule over us.,,

He then deposed Ardashir and re
St. Isaac from the pontifical chair, and
fiscated their private property. Ardashi
confined at Khujastan and St. Isaac sen
banishment. In his stead an individual n
Surmak was appointed to govern the C
of Armenia. Vehmihrshabuh, a Persian
sent as prefect of that kingdom. Thus, t
minion of the Arsacides over the Arme
ceased for ever, after having lasted for
years. This occured in the year 428. A
death of Ardashir, a captive in Khuj
the race of the Arsacides also becam
tinct.

# THE GOVERNMENT

OF THE

# PREFECTS

In this brief sketch of Armenian history, we do not think proper to relate all the events that occured during the goverment of the different Prefects that ruled over Armenia. We, therefore, shall give a general idea, and make mention of some of the events which we thing most worthy of being brought to the knowledge of the reader.

The Government of the Prefects in Armenia lasted 456 years. This dignity sometimes was held by Armenians, oftener by foreigners of different nations and religions.

The Prefects were first sent by the Persians and possessed three distinct powers: first, as viceroys in behalf of Persia; secondly, as having the supreme government of the land, without referring to any state or prince; thirdly, the power of life and death, and the nomination and recall of the governors of the provinces at will.

They were, however, restricted from altering the different orders of nobility, and from seizing by force any towns and villages and appropriating them to their private purposes. They were not accustomed to retain foreign troops to any great amount, they had merely a small force from their own country as a body-guard. They generally performed all expeditions with Armenian soldiers. In great emergency only, they would send for troops from Persia. Their general place of residence was the city of Duin, where they collected the tributes to dispatch to the Persian king. The period of their prefectures was unlimited. Those appointed from amongst the Armenians had precisely the same power and privileges as others.

When this country fell under the dominion of the Caliphs of Damascus, whose power superseded that of the Persians in Armenia, Prefects were usually sent at the head of a large body of troops to take possession of

the government. The city of Duin was generally the seat of their power, and thence they spread their army over the kingdom, keeping the Armenians in awe, and ready to oppose an invader at whatever point he presented himself. They were not altogether independent in the exercise of their authority, being placed under the immediate control of the Governor of Aderbadagan. On particular emergencies, however, they were allowed to inflict capital punishment. The appointment of Lieutenants to provinces rested solely with them.

Sometimes the Prefect was appointed by the Caliph from among the Armenians, but he was not allowed the power of punishing criminals with death without a previous reference to Damascus or Bagdad.

The rulers of the Grecian part of Armenia, appointed by the Emperor, were also styled Prefects.

## Chapter I.

### Vassag the Sunian and the Vartanian

### A. D. 442.

One of the most memorable events whi occured during the period of the Prefects Armenia, was that of the Vartanians.

When, in the year 441, Hazguerd t Second ascended the throne of Persia, meditated the conversion of the Armenia Aghuans and Georgians, to the worship fire, to which he was instigated by the su gestions of his vizier Mihrnerseh.

Varazvaghan, the son-in-law of Vass the Sunian, with whom he had quarelle left Armenia and came to Persia; whe being informed of the king's wish, he abju ed his faith and embraced the religion the Persians. Then waiting on Mihrnerseh urged the instant commencement of the a tempt to convert his countrymen.

Hazguerd wrote to the Armenians, Geo gians and Aghuans, desiring them to se him troops to aid him in his war with t Huns. He imagined that, by thus gettii the chiefs into a foreign country, he cou easily convert them and the people accc

ding to his wish. In order, however, to begin by conciliation, he appointed Vassag the Sunian Prefect, and Vartan the Mamigonian Generalissimo of the forces in Armenia.

The Armenian forces soon joined the king, who marched against the Huns. Two years were spent in various contests, but nothing decisive was effected. Hazguerd being uneasy, lest the Armenians should be disheartened by the protraction of the war, caused a great part of them to return home, and others to be sent in their stead. Then he built a castle near the gate of Jor (Derbend), and there established his court.

The king now began to prosecute his design of converting the Christians. He exhorted the chiefs to renounce their faith and embrace the doctrine of the Magi; but all was ineffectual.

He then alternately tried mildness and severity, and some of the chiefs and the nobles either suffered martyrdom or were thrown into dungeons. Many other Armenians were tortured or punished with severity, but without effect.

Then he sent to Armenia one Tenshabuh to harass the inhabitants by heavy taxes, leaving to his discretion to torture them if they were unable to furnish what he might require from them. But all was ineffectual; the people remained firm in their faith.

After the conquest of the Huns, Ha
returned to Persia and wrote to the
nians in the most peremptory manne
manding them to embrace the Persian
ion; he sent also an account of the
of the Persian faith.

St. Joseph, the Armenian pontiff, co
a meeting in the city of Ardashad, at
by all the chiefs, and wrote a reply
distinguished for its wisdom and piety
guerd immediately issued a mandate,
manding the whole of the Armenian
to repair to his court. Vassag the P
with Vartan the General, and other
went to Hazguerd, and immediately
confined in prison; they were to be ex
chains to a distant country, if they d
worship the sun on its rising the foll
morning.

One of the eunuchs of the king, wh
a christian but obliged to conceal his
came and advised them to profess outv
to yield to the king's wish; otherwis
would be banished for ever from their
try, and then christianity would pe
Armenia, as Hazguerd intended to
there troops and Magi, and forcibly c
the inhabitants to embrace the Persi
ligion.

The chiefs, hoping to preserve their
try from such horrors, reluctantly co

ed, and in the morning worshipped the sun. At which the king overjoyed, sent them back with presents, troops, and a number of Magi, ordering them to convert all the Armenians

On their arriving in Armenia, the chief Magi, with some troops, entered a village and wished to demolish a church. St. Leonce, the priest of the village, with his people, drove the impious hand out of the place, and on the circulation of the report, multitudes of Armenians ran to the village, amongst them Joseph the pontiff and many bishops.

Vartan, the general, came from the camp and threw himself at their feet, imploring forgiveness for his apostasy, and acquainted them with its object and the intentions of the chiefs. Vassag also, who had from his heart renounced his faith, came to them and deceitfully persuaded them to retire to their own homes and to leave the Magi alone, who, he assured them, finding their errand fruitless, would leave the country.

The Magi, thus left free, at length obtained entrance into the houses of the Armenian nobles, some of whom they gained over to their religion. Vartan, seeing the progress of the ministers of the fire worship, disgusted, with his family left the country. But soon the other chiefs sent to pacify him, and made him come back. They then drove out

the Magi from their houses. Vassag tl
fect, with the view of supporting th
aters, collected the Persian troops in th
ince of Pakrevant; but they were at
and defeated, and Vassag also taken pr
Nevertheless they let him go free,
sware on the Gospel to be thencef
constant to christianity.

Then the Armenian bishops and
convened an assembly in Shahabivan,
they swore to fight for the honour and
fence of the Holy Church. They asse
their forces, amounting to about 1(
men, and attacked all the Persians
kingdom, as well as the troops which V
together with other apostates, had col
The Magi were put to death and thei
ples were demolished.

On the Aghuans begging for assi
against Hazguerd, who wished to c
their country also to idolatry, the
nians wrote to Theodosius the young
seeching him to assist them; but the
ror died soon after, and Marcianus h
cessor did not choose to enterfere, be
fraid of the Persians, and being at tha
engaged in the confusion created by t
lowers of Eutyches, for which purpose
assembly was convened in Chalcedon.

The Armenians then, putting their t
God, divided their troops into three

ions. One was given to Nershabuh Rumposian the Ardzrunian; he was to proceed to Aderbadagan and prevent any invasion of the Persians. The second was placed under the command of Vassag the Sunian to remain in Armenia and to protect the inhabitants. The third was confided to Vartan for the purpose of rendering assistance to the Aghuans; which was immediately done, and in his progress meeting the Persians near the city of Khalkhal he cut them to pieces, passed the river Gur, and having entered the country, caused the Magi to be massacred and the country was purified from heathen sacrifices. They then proceeded to the gate of Jor, before mentioned, where they put to death all the Persians in the neighbourhood, and totally demolished the edifice built by king Hazguerd.

While Vartan was engaged in such gallant exploits, Vassag the Sunian, together with some others, again introduced into Armenia the worship of fire and commenced the same scene of blood and torture. Churches were demolished, the priests were tortured, and the sons of the chiefs seized and sent to Persia to king Hazguerd.

The division of Armenia under the Greeks was at that time governed by one Vassag a Mamigonian, to whom Vassag wrote privately, accusing the Vartanians of having reb-

elled against the king and the Em
Upon which this Vassag also, no less v
than his adviser, wrote to the Emper
rendered Vartan and his companions c
able. Vartan hearing all the calumnie
the wickedness of Vassag, hastened t
menia and made an incursion into
the province of Vassag, where he dest
many places.

Then the Armenian chiefs cons
each other, sent one of their Persian
oners to Hazguerd, with directions to
their willingness to serve him, if he
leave them unmolested in the exerc
their religion. He accepted but with a
ly rancour in his heart against the
nians. He thought proper to break the
between them, that he might execu
more easily that which he contemp
The Armenians understood his intentio
united themselves more closely, in or
be ready for any contingency.

In the year 451 Hazguerd, despairi
elude the vigilance of the Armenians,
ed Mihrnerseh to proceed into Armenia
a large army, and to massacre all the
sers indiscriminately. The Persian
proceeding to Paydagaran, sent for the
tate Vassag, by whom he was imf
of the preparations for resistance of t
nited party, and besought him ear

to endeavour to dissolve their union. The treacherous man went to the chiefs and swore that the terms of the Persians were to leave them free in the exercise of their religion, if they would be content to remain in peace; otherwise if they decided on war, he was determined to subdue them by the sword. By these wilful falsehoods he succeeded in breaking the union between the Georgians, the Aghuans and the Armenians.

Vartan, remarking the iniquity of Vassag and the warlike preparations of the Persians, spread emissaries throughout Armenia, and invited his countrymen to join his standard. Thus his army amounted to 66,000 men, who devoted themselves to death for their religion. They all gathered together in the city of Ardashad, and were joined by St. Joseph the pontiff, and Isaac, the bishop of the Rushdunians, with Leonce the priest and many others of the clergy.

Vassag also, had not been idle. He collected his adherents and went to the Persian camp. By means also of some villanous priests, he cooled the ardour of many who were attached to the united party.

Vartan hearing that hostilities were made by the Persians, advanced against them near the village of Avarayr. The Persians encamped on the plain, the Armenians near a river called Deghmood. The day being advanced,

the battle was deferred until the follo
morning. Vartan passed among the rar
his men, accompanied by the priest Le
both exhorting them to resist mar
against the invaders. The Armenians all
the sacrament that night, and inflamed
the love of Christ and their country,
themselves doubly strengthened.

On the following day, which was th
of June, the Armenians, eager to shed
blood for their faith, crossed the rive
commenced the attack. They were at
attended with success, and the Persians
cut down with great slaughter; but tr
broke out in their ranks. Five thousand
who were secretly allied to the other p
drew themselves off and joined the Pers
The fortune of the day changed and th
menians were routed. The glorious Va
after performing prodigies of valour, fell
nine other chiefs; 286 men were left or
field. In the pursuit, the Persians took
prisoners, who being wounded, could
escape; they were immediately put to d
thus the loss of the Armenians amount
1,036 men.

The victors suffered more severely,
slain amounting to 3,544 men, nine of w
were great chiefs of Persia. If the 5,000
fidious cowards had not thrown confu
among the Armenians, the Persians w
have incontestably lost the battle.

The defeated army took refuge in the fortresses. Vassag, seeing how little he had gained by his victory, induced them by false promises to leave their strongholds and then put them to death. He succeeded also in getting St. Joseph, and other priests into his power when he placed them in irons. Then he marched against Hemayag, the brother of Vartan, who was at the head of a few troops, defeated and took him prisoner, and barbarously murdered him. Then the Persians, divided into several detachments, proceeded to ravage the country. The Armenians, exasperated at so many outrages flew to arms in a body and furiously attacking the spoilers, completely defeated them, taking numbers of prisoners. They then entered Persia and ravaged the country, burning towns and villages.

The Persian general alarmed at this unforeseen turn of affairs, wrote to Hazguerd and imputed all these misfortunes to Vassag. The Persian king grieved at the unexpected condition of his army, wrote to the Persian general to endeavour to appease the Armenians, promising them in his name, to forbear for the future persecuting them on account of their religion. He also ordered Adrormizd to be appointed Prefect, and then returned to Persia.

The first act of this Prefect was to seize

the following individuals and to sen
to Persia, bound in fetters; viz: St.
Isaac, bishop of the Rushdunians, the
Mushé, Samuel, Abraham, Leonče a
sene; some of their scholars and oth
hoped to inflict a severe blow on chris
by thus suppressing its most zealous
ers.

While these men remained impris
Persia, Vassag also proceeded there,
to receive a large reward for his s
But Mihrnerseh had represented him
king, as the cause of all their misf
in Armenia. He, therefore, was tried b
guerd and found guilty. The king d
the wretched apostate of all his pov
committed him to prison. There he
most miserable death, having prove
self the most bitter and successful f
had ever taken arms against his cou

The other bishops and priests wer
tyred by the order of Hazguerd on th
of July 454.

The chiefs and nobles who had beer
to go to Persia, languished for four
in gloomy dungeons on account of thei
ion; but remaining steadfast in thei
they were at length released throu
intercession of a Persian prince. It
till the year 464, during the reign of
the successor of Hazguerd, that the
permitted to return to Armenia.

## Chapter II.

### The exploits of Vahan and his followers.

### A. D. 466.

Hemayag, the brother of Vartan the Great, had four sons; Vahan, Vassag, Ardashes, and Vart. When the Armenian chiefs were restored to their country, Vahan and his two brothers, Vassag and Ardashes, who lived in the frontiers of the Kukars, came to Daron, their birth place. Here they grew in wisdom and valour, and gained the esteem of all who knew them.

Vahan was distinguished by the Prefect Aderwushnasb with peculiar favour which caused him to be detested by Katisho the Khorkhorunian.

This individual conspired with others as worthless as himself, who had denied their faith, and wrote to king Phiroz calomniating Vahan and accusing him of endeavouring to excite the people to an insurrection.

Vahan perceiving the machinations of his enemies, proceeded to the Persian court and in the presence of Phiroz abjured his faith and professed that of the Persians. The

king much pleased, loaded him wi
ents and sent him again to Arme
he had received from him as a hos
youngest brother Vart. But he
doubly hated by his enemies for the
he enjoyed, and avoided by his fo
quaintances and friends. Upon whic
began to regreet the step he ha
being also dreadfully tormented by
science. At length, following the
the faithful and pious chiefs, he d
atone publicly for his apostasy.

About the year 481 king Phiroz
war against the Hephthals, and
Prefect of Armenia to assist him wi
One half of these troops were apos
that they molested the faithful d
expedition. On the conclusion of th
Armenians returned to their coun
encamped on the plains of Shirag
into two columns; one composed
Persian detachment and the apost
other of those who had remained f
their religion. The two camps w
distance apart.

Before they were disbanded, son
christian chiefs, who were disgust
conduct of the apostates, thought t
be fit opportunity to make an effo
free the country from the Persian
apostates. They disclosed their

Vahan, who gladly consented and made them all swear upon the Gospel, in the presence of a priest, to remain faithful unto death for the faith and the Church. They all agreed and went to their tents. But one of the chiefs,named Varazshabuh, from the tribe of the Amadunians, was a traitor; he went during the night to the Prefect and disclosed the design to all who were there present. They immediately in haste and terror marched to the city of Ani, where they stopped during the day. The following night they prosecuted their flight and took refuge in the castle of Ardashad.

The united party discovering the retreat of their enemies, pursued them and captured a few, among whom was Katisho, the Khorkhorunian. Then they proceeded to Ardashad and laied siege to it; but the Prefect effected his escape to the regions of Aderbadagan. The united party, or the Vahanians, left Ardashad and went to Duin, where they elected a new Prefect and began to prepare for war.

The new Prefect was named Isaac; he was a Pacradunian noble and had already distinguished himself by his eminent skill and courage. It was at his special request that Moses of Khoren wrote the history of Armenia. Vahan the Mamigonian was appointed general of the Armenian army, and

the chiefs swore to obey him in every thing appertaining to war.

The fugitive Prefect advised by the apostate chiefs, gathered an army of 7000 men, from the country of Aderbadagan, and marched against the Vahanians, in order to put a stop to their preparations. He crossed the river Arax and prepared to enter Nakhjuan, when the Vahanians were informed of his advance. They resolved to leave Isaac, the Prefect, Vahan the general, Vahan the Gamsaragan and few other chiefs, to protect Duin, and the rest marched to meet the enemy; they were 400 in number.

They advanced to the village of Varazguerd, where they halted and sent forward Vassag, the brother of Vahan the general, with a few men, to the village of Grewag to reconnoitre the enemy and discover their strength. The Persian Prefect arrived at the same village the next morning, not knowing that Vassag was there.

Vassag was apprehensive that he should not be able to retire with all his men. He therefore, summoned them together, and directed them to make away in small parties of two or three, and hasten to join their army. They all succeeded in making their escape and Vassag coming to his friends, made his report saying: 'The Persians are indeed more numerous than we, but many of them are useles,,.

The Armenians advanced towards the village of Agory, where they encamped and made preparations to receive the enemy, whom they expected to arrive the next day. At dawn the next morning they divided their little band into four divisions of a 100 men each. The first, under Vassag, occupied the centre. The second, under Adom the Gununian, formed the right wing. The third, under Karjoyle, formed the left wing. The fourth, headed by Nerseh the Gamsaragan, composed the body of reserve.

The Persians arriving and seeing the small number of the Armenians, thought they were mad men. Nevertheless the attack began; but unfortunately for the Armenians, in the midst of the conflict, Karjoyle Malkhazuni with his 100 men, deserted to the Persians. The Armenians on seeing this treachery were inspired with the greatest fury, and calling upon God for aid, rushed impetuously on their foes. Nothing could stand their enthusiasm. The conclusion was that the Persians were routed, the Persian Prefect was killed with other leaders, and the battle-field was soon clear of the enemy. The victorious Armenians hastened to Duin, where they exclaimed to those who anxiously awaited news: "The power of the Holy Cross has conquered, and will ever conquer,,. A circumstantial account of the late contest

was given, and then assembling in the Church, they offered praise and thanksgiving to God.

Now the brave Vahan, seeing the success of his followers, sent messengers to other Armenian tribes, inviting them to join the united party. Some of the nobles of those tribes, being well inclined to the undertaking of Vahan, persuaded their followers to accompany them, and thus they joined the Vahanian army.

King Phiroz, when he heard of the events that happened in Armenia, became extremely irritated against Vahan and ordered Vart, the brother of Vahan, who was an hostage in Persia, to be put in bonds. Then ordering an army to be collected, he divided it into four detachments and sent them in the beginning of the spring into Armenia, with directions to take Vahan alive and to put the others to death. The command of these troops was given to Adernerseh Salar, a renowned warrior.

Vahan hearing of this, assembled his chiefs in a council when they decided upon war. Gathering his little army and accompanied by Johan the pontiff, he set out towards the province of Ardaz, and encamped near the village of Nersehabad, being but a short distance from the camp of the Persians. Isaac, the Prefect, commanded the

centre; Parshegh Vahevuni, aided by Papguen the Sunian, Adom the Gununian, and Pabag Baluny, the right wing; the left wing was given to Nerseh the Gamsaragan, and his brothers Vahan and Hrahad, aided by the general's brother Vassag. Vahan himself stayed with a select few in reserve ready to afford assistance wherever it might be most required, and was seconded by Vren of Vanant and Bab Ardaguny.

Preparations thus being made, at sunrise the battle commenced. The Persians advanced to the charge of the right wing of the Armenian army, and put it to flight. At this juncture Isaac the Prefect engaged the Persian general Adernerseh Salar in single combat. A furious struggle ensued and after exchanging several violent blows, the Persian was exhausted and thrown from his horse; but in the confusion that prevailed, he succeeded in escaping amongst the crowd.

Vahan having observed the confusion into which his army was thrown by the defeat of his right wing, called upon Vren of Vanant to advance to the charge; the latter replied: "Do not confide in me in an hour like this„. Upon which Vahan, making the sign of the Cross, rushed at the right wing of the Persians. Nobly seconded by the two brothers Nerseh and Hrahad the Gamsaragans, they quickly threw the ranks of the

enemy into disorder, cutting them down wit immense slaughter, and then they passe to the left wing, where they were equall successful. One of the four Persian general boldly held his ground, which Veshnasl another Persian general, noticing, he marche to attack the Armenians on their weake side. But the brave Vahan at this momer rushing on the former general, after a shar combat stretched him on the ground. Nerse the Gamsaragan also killed the other, aft which the Persians gave themselves up t flight. The victorious Armenians pursuin their foes killed a great number of them, an then turning back to the camp, divided th spoil amongst themselves. Then they retire to the province of Zaghgoden, to a place cal ed Varshag, to recruit their strength.

While they were enjoying the pleasure their victory, news reached them that Va had escaped from Persia. And indeed, h came to Armenia with his attendents, know ing nothing of the means by which he ha been extricated from the Persian bonds. H advent amongst them created universal jo and all were encouraged, feeling that Go was with them.

## Chapter III.

### ıe treachery of Vaghthang the Georgian.

### A. D. 482.

At this time Vahan received ambassadors ım Vaghthang, king of Georgia, informing n that Georgia was invaded by an army Persians, and, therefore, he called upon n for assistance.

Vahan not doubting the truth of the tale ık his men and set out for Georgia. Vaghang met them, and in order to prevent eir detecting his falsehood, led them on by rious devices, and deceived them many ys, until the Persians arrived in large mber, headed by Mihran, and having with ım elephants, chariots and armed cavalry ım various nations.

The Armenians seeing their number beme alarmed, and crossing the river Gur, camped on the opposite bank. But on the lowing day Vahan with his troops also ossed the river and took up his position ar the enemy's camp. A battle soon end, and Vahan confiding in God and seıded by the Gamsaragans, cut down all

who opposed him. Many distinguished Persians fell by his hand. During the heat of the conflict, Isaac the Prefect, who had wholly devoted himself to Christ and the Church, after performing many acts of valour, was killed, and with him Vassag also, the brother of Vahan the General, fell.

While these glorious commanders were thus valiantly contending, several vile and treacherous Armenians, who were in secret league with the Persians, all of a sudden pretended to take flight, crying out: "Save yourselves, the day is lost. ,,

This action made the Vahanians loose the battle; for those who heard the cry, thinking all lost, joined in the flight. Vahan and the Gamsaragans observing this, knew that further resistance would be useless, and therefore followed the fugitives. As they were leaving the scene of action, Vahan observed Papguen the Sunian lying wounded on the ground. Not being able to leave his old colleague to the vengeance of the Persians, he alighted from his horse, took him up before him, and thus saved his life.

Hrahad the Gamsaragan was thrown from his horse in the retreat, and proceeding on foot he was taken prisoner and carried to Mihran, who put him in chains. A valiant Sunian, of the name of Hazt, was also taken prisoner.

Vahan the General, with Nerseh and Vahan the Gamsaragans, retired to the province of Daiks, to the village of Mugnarinj, where they were joined by other fugitives to the number of 100.

Mihran set out in pursuit of Vahan, but aware of the desperate valour of his opponent, sent him proposals of peace. Vahan replied: "If you will allow the Armenians a free and unmolested profession of their religion, we will in all cases obey the Persians. If you will not accept our subjection on these terms, we desire to say, that we consider it much better to die a glorious death in defence of Christianity. „

While these negotiations were going on, Mihran received an order from king Phiroz to return immediately to Persia. Obliged to obey, he set out with the prisoners Hrahad, Hazt the Sunian, and many others. When Nerseh the Gamsaragan, the elder brother of Hrahad heard this, he became deeply afflicted. At length he put himself at the head of some resolute men, and boldly followed Mihran's camp, with the intention of saving his brother by a brisk attack.

The Persians having encamped near the village of Pakuan, in the province of Pakrevant, Nerseh with his followers approached. In the village was a chapel dedicated to St. Gregory the Illuminator. Nerseh entered the

chapel and kneeling down, fervently pr to St. Gregory to aid him to save his br er. While he was engaged in this ac devotion, suddenly Hrahad appeared b him, having been released from the Per bonds. They both glorifying the Almi for this signal instance of his favour, ret ed to Duin.

When Mihran discovered the escap Hrahad, he immediately summoned Haz Sunian, and urged him to renounce Chri nity; he refusing to do so, was behe by order of the tyrant, and after the de ture of the Persians, he was interred in chapel of St. Gregory.

## Chapter IV.

### Other acts of the Vahanians.

### A. D. 483.

Vahan, after the retreat of Mihran, ceeded to Duin, where he had the plea of meeting again his old colleagues, Ne and Hrahad. And soon the winter se obliged both parties to take a little repo

When the spring came, Zarmihr Haz vukht, the Persian general, joined by sev apostate chiefs, advanced with a large a to the siege of Duin.

Vahan, wishing to prevent all the horrors of the siege and sacking of Duin, determined to withdrow from the capital. They first repaired and strengthened the fortifications of the city, and then recommending themselves to the Almighty, issued out in small parties of two and three to effect a retreat from the enemy. The Persians having blockaded the city on all sides, the Vahanians were obliged to cut their way through the thronged ranks of their opponents. They all succeeded in their enterprise, to the great amazement of the Persians, except two of the chiefs, who in saving the life of Johan Mantagunian the pontiff, were themselves killed by the Persians.

Hazaravukhd, the Persian general, irritated at the unexpected escape of the Armenian chiefs, immediately set out in pursuit of Vahan, guided by Kutihon the Sunian. Vahan took refuge in the fortress of Varairvar, in the province of Shaghakom, which was situated in that part of Armenia which belonged to the Greeks. Hazaravukhd by forced marches arrived at Varairvar; but he was enraged to hear that the Vahanians had just left the place. Not being able to contain his resentment, he wreaked his fury on the innocent inhabitants. He, however, found there the wives of Nerseh and Hrahad the Gamsaragans, whom he sent to his camp. He

thought that their husbands, for their sakes, would return to obedience.

Just after this event, Hazaravukhd received an order from king Phiroz, to march with his army into Georgia. He appointed one Shabuh as governor in Armenia, gave him 3000 Persians to secure his government, and then left the country for Georgia.

Shabuh, the Prefect, immediately after, endeavoured to conciliate the two Gamsaragans, promising to restore them their wives, who were kept in a fortress. But the two chiefs replied that their labours were not directed towards the attainment of wordly goods, but towards establishing the truth of their holy religion. They indulged however in hope that the Almighty would preserve their wives in purity, and permit them to meet again either in this world or in that which is to come.

Shabuh enraged at this answer, endeavoured by all means in his power to seize them. Having heard where Vahan took refuge, immediately marched there and placed his troops in ambush along a river. Vahan, by means of spies, discovered the ambuscade, and having assembled a number of peasants, together with his own followers, he marched by night to attack his enemies. The peasants, were posted opposite to the place where the Persians lay, and bore weapons and shields, so as to render deception more perfect.

The Persians thinking the peasants were the Vahanians, deliberated as to whether they should attack them; when Vahan who had come by a circuitous route fell upon their rear, and made a furious assault. Every thing was instantly in the greatest confusion; the Persians, uncertain as to the nature and number of their assailants, dealt their blows indiscriminately, thus many of their own men perished. They at length took to flight, leaving 600 men slain upon the field.

Shabuh, having rallied his troops, and procured a large reinforcement, returned to the conflict, and bitterly enraged at his late defeat was determined either to conquer or perish.

When Vahan heard of his approach, he arranged his little army, composed of one hundred men, and prepared to fight. But the Armenians, on seeing the vast number of the Persians, were seized with a panic and fled, leaving Vahan, the three Gamsaragans, Nerseh, Hrahad, Vahan, Mushegh the Mamigonian, and a few others, amounting to about thirty, to the mercy of their assailants. Shabuh seeing their small number and certain of victory, ordered his men to take them one by one and bind them with chains. Vahan made the sign of the cross, and having called upon God to assist him, darted into

the Persian ranks and made fearful havoc. Followed by his brave men, he passed through the ranks of the enemy. Four of his men penetrating to the spot where the apostate Kutihon was stationed, attacked and killed him; but on their turn, being surrounded by their foes, after a valiant resistance, were killed.

Shabuh, filled with shame at the result of the late combat, quitted the scene of his disgrace and retired to Passen. Here he received messengers from Persia, who informed him of the death of Phiroz. He immediately set out for Persia, and the grandees of the Kingdom appointed Vagharsh, the brother of Phiroz, to the crown.

This king, who was of a quiet, peaceful and prudent character, wished to make himself acquainted with the condition of Armenia. And being informed of the gallant exploits of Vahan, thought proper to adopt conciliatory measures with him. He, therefore, sent Nikhor who was meek, mild, and just man, to the prefecture of Armenia, with strict orders to endeavour to bring the gallant Vahan to obedience. Nikhor on his arrival in Armenia, halted at the village of Nuarsag, and sent two of his nobles to Vahan to arrange peace. Vahan, however, sent this reply: "We cannot come to agreement except on three conditions. First, that you leave

ıe Armenians freely to embrace the chris-
an faith. Secondly, that you favour no-one
ho professes the worship of fire. Thirdly,
ıat the king on all occasions shall hear both
des of a question before condemning either.„
On Nikhor agreeing to these conditions,
ahan was invited to go to him. Vahan claim-
l hostages for his safety, whereupon Nikhor
ınt him eight Persian nobles. Then Vahan
ith a few men and some of the most illus-
ious chiefs, went to the village of Nuarsag,
ıd ranging his troops in order of battle, com-
ıanded the war trumpets to sound a flour-
h. Nikhor, who thought it was treachery,
ıd being alarmed thereat, sent to Vahan to
ıy, that he ought to observe the Persian
ıw which was in effect that none but the
eneral should blow a trumpet on entering
: quitting a town. To this Vahan replied:
First make me a servant of the Lord of the
ersians, then, and not till then, will I ob-
ırve their customs„. He then entered the
illage and met Nikhor.

The Prefect received him with honours
ıd agreed to his wishes. A council was
ıen held, and Vahan was urged to go to
ıe king, upon the understanding that no
arm should befall him. Vahan having
ɔmplied, set out for Persia. Nikhor had
reviously written an account of every thing
ı the king; thus when Vahan arrived at

the Persian Court, he was kindly received, and much honoured. He was made Lord of the Mamigonians, and appointed Generalissimo of the Armenians. In the same manner, the other Armenian chiefs were honoured by the king, who in sending them back, gave an order that henceforth the Armenians should be left free in the accomplishment of their religious duties.

They then came back to Duin, where they were met by the pontiff Johan and the people, and proceeding to the Church, offered thanksgiving to God.

A new Prefect succeeded Nikhor named Antegan, a prudent and peaceable character, who had observed the wise actions of Vahan. He was shortly after recalled, and on his arrival in Persia, he represented to the king that Vahan alone was worthy to rule over Armenia; and that so long as he was alive, there would be no occasion to send another Prefect to that country.

The king pleased at these reports, appointed Vahan to the prefecture of Armenia. Vart, his brother, succeeded him as general of the Armenians. Vahan then set out on a tour through the provinces, reforming abuses as he proceeded. Wherever he found fire-temples, he razed them to the ground and built churches in their stead. The rites and duties of the Christian religion began to be exercis-

ed publicly, and Vahan, assisted by Johan the Pontiff, repaired all the Convents which had fallen into decay, and built many others.

Gavad, the son of Phiroz, succeeded Vagharsh to the crown of Persia. Instigated by the Magi, he sent to Armenia a new governor with an army and number of Ministers of their religion. Thus he recommenced the persecution of the Christian Armenians. Tumult and dissatisfaction pervaded the whole nation.

Vahan, who became extremely uneasy at the renewal of these persecutions, being joined by other chiefs, he gathered troops, and attacking the Persians, put them all to sword. Gavad on hearing this, was much enraged; but being at that time at war with the Greeks, he was compelled to suppress his desire for vengeance.

It was in the year 510 that Vahan the Mamigonian died, having attained a great age, and having presided in the prefecture twenty six years. Vahan, perhaps, did more for the good of his country than any other individual who has lived before or since his time, whether he be considered as the champion of her church, the defender of her glory, or the improver of her internal condition.

After the death of Vahan several other

Prefects, as well as Pontiffs, succeeded eacl other. During whose time it is worthy t mention an event which occured in the yea of Grace 551, during the pontificate o Moses the Second. A meeting was held b him, of bishops and laymen in the city o Duin, at which the Armenian calender wa remodelled and revised. The Armenian Er commences from this period, and the date o the new calendar is reckoned from the 11th. July, 552nd. year of our Lord.

## Chapter V.

### Vartan the second. Vahan surnamed the Wolf and other Prefects.

### A. D. 570.

Persecutions against the Christian Arme nians were renewed again by other Persia Prefects, in the year 558. There was at th time one named Vartan the Second, a Mam gonian, the son of Vassag, and grandson Vart. He was of a brave and warlike cha acter. He conspired with several other A menian chiefs to save their country from t yoke of the Persians. And indeed they ma aged in several encounters to defeat the But at length discord broke out among

the Armenians, and Vartan seeing that he was unable to oppose a new expedition of the Persians, took his family and fled to Constantinople. He was kindly received by the Greek Emperor Justinian. An army was raised there and again Vartan marched to Armenia, causing to the Persians a great lost.

Khosrove, the king of Persia, exasperated at his defeat, with an army of 100,000 infantry and 40,000 cavalry, marched against the Greeks. After a number of battles, a peace was agreed between the Persians and the Greeks, by which Armenia became again subject to the Persian yoke.

When Maurice, an Armenian from the village of Oshagan, was appointed Emperor at Constantinople, Khosrove, the grandson of the late Khosrove king of Persia, applied to him for protection against Vahram, his general, who had driven him from his throne. Maurice assembled a large army to assist him to recover his crown. Many Armenian chiefs joined this army, amongst whom was Mushegh the Mamigonian, who had been recently appointed a chief over the Grecian Armenians and dwelt in Daron. Success attended the expedition; Vahram was defeated and slain, and Khosrove again reinstated, in the year 589.

The Greeks brought false accusations to

the king against Mushegh the Mamigonian, for which Khosrove endeavoured to put him to death. Mushegh took refuge in his own province, and his innocence soon becoming evident Khosrove endeavoured to recompense him.

From the year 600 no Persian Prefect was ever sent to Armenia, that office being held by different Armenians until the period when governors were sent on behalf of the Saracens, or the Caliphs of Damascus.

Nevertheless, about the year 604, enmity again broke out between king Khosrove and Mushegh. The former despatched against the latter 10,000 men, headed by Mihran his nephew. Mushegh not being able to oppose such a force, sent for his relative Vahan, surnamed the Wolf, from the fortress of Oghgan, and on his appearing before him spoke thus: "My son, I am now grown old and have no heir; I will give unto thee the whole of my possessions, and thou shalt combat with the enemies of the faith, who are now coming against us,,. Vahan engaged with ardour in the service of his kinsman, and sought to overcome Mihran by stratagem. He sent him messengers, desiring him to return to Persia. Before agreeing, Mihran demanded that Mushegh should be delivered into his hands. Vahan consented on condition that the land of Daron

should be retained by him. When Vahram arrived at the city of Mush, Vahan met him as a friend, and agreed that he should be furnished with 4,000 Persian cavalry, to carry the plot into execution.

With these men Vahan proceeded to the village of Khartz, where he left fifty of his cavalry, saying: "If I send a man to you with such a sign, hasten to Mihran for more troops, and then march to the city of Otz,,. He then set out for Otz with the remainder of the Persians, and as the pass into that city was narrow and difficult, he directed them to enter after him in a peaceable way taking care to keep their weapons concealed under their garments. "And now, said he, recollect, when I give such a signal, do not spare man, woman, nor child, but put all to the sword,,.

Vahan then entered the city, followed by the Persians, whom he ordered to halt at different houses, where he had previously stationed strong determined men, who as the unsuspecting Persians entered, strangled them in silence.

While this act was going forward, Vahan sent one of his servants to the other fifty soldiers stationed at the village, directing them to apply to Mihran for a reinforcement. The latter immediately despatched to Otz 2,000 men more. Vahan having habited his

Armenian followers in the dresses of the murdered Persians, and having mounted them upon their horses, led them out of the city. The two thousand men on their arrival were permitted to enter without opposition; but on their beginning to blow their trumpets as if in triumph, the citizens rose up against them and massacred every soul.

After the destruction of these latter, Vahan assembled 800 powerful men and posted them in ambush near the river Meghdy. He then repaired to Mihran, to whom he made complaints against the troops with which he had been furnished and succeeded in obtaining another reinforcement of 2000 men, which he declared were absolutely indispensable to ensure the capture of Mushegh. These were then led by him towards the river beforementioned, where the concealed troops, on a preconcerted signal, cut them off to a man.

He thence sent messengers to Mihran with the news that all had succeeded to his utmost wishes and forthwith returned to this general, attended by a hundred men, and in a conversation he had with him, told him, that the next day would see Mushegh in his power. Then withdrawing, he watched his opportunity, and whilst Mihran was asleep in bed, he approached and plunged a javelin into his body. After this act he went into another appartment, and sent for the

secretary of the Persian general, whom he obliged by threats to write, as if from Mihran, ordering Varshir the governor of the Abahunians, to arrive within three days, and bring with him 3000 men. Vahan then caused the unfortunate secretary to be strangled.

During this time the Persian troops were engaged in revelry to which they had been tempted by the machinations of Vahan. After the latter had observed the success of his plans with Mihran, he directed the few attendants who had accompanied him to the Persian camp, to close silently all the outlets of the places wherein the soldiers were carousing, and then to set fire to them. This act completed the destruction of the enemy's army. Vahan then assembled his troops near mount Cuth, where he pitched a camp, made to resemble as much as possible a Persian one, and stationed several Armenians outside, clad like Persian chiefs. Varshir who had obeyed the false summons he had received, within the time spacified approached at the head of 3600 men. Having halted some distance from where Vahan and his followers lay, he set out alone for the camp, where he supposed Mihran was. On his arrival he was ushered into the presence of Vahan by the disguised chiefs, and not being intimately acquainted with Mihran, he saluted

Vahan, fancying him to be the Persian g
eral. He was, however, quickly undece
by the Armenian chief, who addressing
in a scornful way, said: "So you thou
to force the Armenians to embrace
Persian religion,,! He then directed the pe
to seize and scourge him. Varshir confo
ed by this language and overpowered a
reflection of the danger he was in, fell
less on the ground. On the attendant
Vahan seizing him and commencing
punishment which they were ordered t
flict, Varshir recovered a little and impl
mercy. Vahan promised to spare his li
he did as he directed him, which wa
write immediately to the officer whom
had left in charge of his troops, direc
him to send 1,000 men to the foot of M
Cuth, 1,000 to a valley which he na
and leaving the remaining 1600 where
were then encamped, to come to him
ten men.

This was immediately done by the t
fied Varshir, and as soon as the letter
despatched, Vahan ordered him to be stra
ed. The same fate befell the officer and
men whom he had sent for, on their fal
into his hands.

The strength of Varshir's forces b
thus broken by their division into t
bodies, Vahan attacked them successi

hen they, considering themselves in per-
:t safety, had neglected all means of de-
ıce, and destroyed them all with the
ception of fourty, who succeeded in ef-
:ting their escape to Persia. On their rela-
ıg to Khosrove the fate of Mihran and his
my, he became highly incensed, and im-
ediately assembled a large force to revenge
. Vahan the loss he had sustained.

This force was placed under the command
Vakhthang, the uncle of Mihran, who
ırched with speed into Armenia. On his
rival in the country of the Abahunians,
ıhan, who had assembled an army of
,000 men, sent him a message saying:
am surprised, that after hearing of the
ıgical fate of Mihran, you have the rash-
ss to come against us; perhaps you seek
wife amongst the daughters of Armenia.
ıme then to us, and you will find in the
idst of our troops what will soon cool your
ıorous fire! „ After this, Vahan attacked
e Persians twice, and defeated them each
ne. He shortly after died, having proved a
:rible scourge to the enemies of Armenia.
s remains were interred in the convent of
ag.

After his death, his son Sumpad (A. D.
7) assumed the commmand of the Arme-
an troops, and attacking Vakhthang,
feated and killed him, together with three

other Persian generals. He died sho
wards, and was succeeded by his s
who was, by the mother's side, a d
of the family of the Gamsaragan
time one David Saharuny was
Armenia. War having again brok
ween the Greeks and the Persians,
Prefect, became so much alarm
own safety under the Persians, of
was much afraid, that he relinq
government, after holding it tv
years, and went to Constantinople

He was succeeded by Varaz
Pakradunian, who resided in Persi
installed by Khosrove at the he
government of Armenia. But abou
631, Rostom, the governor of Ade
wishing to have the prefecture of
for himself, began to intrigue for th
of deposing Varazdirotz. He, dre
consequence of remaining expos
machinations of his rival, quietly r
ed the government, and retired
family and property to the Greek
Armenia.

The government of the Greek
Armenia was some time after t
given to David Saharuny, who, a
mentioned before, had taken refug
tantinople, when hostilities broke
ween the Persians and Greeks.

remained governor three years, when having displeased some of the chiefs, he was expelled by them. These latter then quarrelled with each other, and by their mutual hostility left the country exposed to the incursions of her enemies. Theodorus the Rushdunian, on observing the disturbances that pervaded Armenia, collected some troops, and by his exertions greatly contributed to lessen the disorders.

## Chapter VI.

### The Saracens in Armenia.

### A. D. 636.

About the year 636, Armenia was invaded by the Saracens, who to the number of 18,000, headed by a chief named Abdorrahman, had advanced into the regions of Daron, committing every where horrible devastations, taxing all the male inhabitants, and carrying away their wives and children.

This was the commencement of the most unhappy era in the annals of Armenia, and the whole country was shortly plunged into ruin and desolation.

The chief of Daron, Vahan the Gamsara-

gan, grandson of Vahan the Wolf, assembled an army of 8000 men, commanded by his brother Diran, and Mushegh another general, and endeavoured to repel the advance of the invaders; Sahur, the chief of the Antzevatzies, together with his followers, joined them. A battle was fought between them and the Saracens; Sahur basely betrayed his countrymen and joined the ranks of the enemy. He was, however, killed by Diran in the course of the battle. Nevertheless the Armenians were defeated with great slaughter, and their two leaders, Diran and Mushegh, were among the slain. All Armenia now lay open to the invaders, and the blaze of conflagration was seen in all parts of the country.

In the year 639 the Saracens advanced with an immense force to the siege of Duin, which they invested on all sides on the 20th. of November, and on the sixth of January following, took it by storm. They caused the most dreadful havoc in the city, by massacring 12,000 of the inhabitants. All its splendid edifices were either burnt or pulled down; after pillaging it of every thing valuable, these ruthless barbarians returned to their own country, carrying away with them 35,000 citizens captive.

Varazdirotz was again appointed Prefect of Armenia by Constantine the grandson of

Heraclius, who succeeded to the imperial throne; but he had only enjoyed that dignity for one year, when he died. His son Sumpad succeeded him. No sooner had the country recovered a little tranquillity after the late invasion and pillage, when the Saracens caused another eruption, by killing and destroying all before them. After despoiling several provinces, they extended their depradations to the district round Mount Ararat. Sumpad, the governor, with some other chiefs, went to meet them, with the intention of stopping their ravages, by submitting to whatever they wished. After they had distributed many valuable gifts, the Saracens were prevailed upon to desist from their spoliations, Sumpad promising to pay pall-tax for the whole nation, and to renounce obedience to the Greeks.

The Emperor Constantine, on being made acquainted with these terms, became extremely irritated, and assembling a numerous army, set out with a determination to bring the Armenians again to subjection by the sword. But Nierses the Pontiff of that time, with a number of bishops, went to meet him and prevailed upon him to appease his anger. The Emperor left some Grecian troops and number of Grecian priests in Armenia, and returned to Constantinople.

The Saracens hearing of the submission of

theArmenians to the authority of the Greeks, renewed, in the year 652, their incursions into that country. By the intercession, however, of Vassag, chief of one part of Armenia Minor, who had submitted to their authority, these invaders refrained from committing such depradations as marked their other visits. They did not kill a single man, but taking hostages to the amount of 1775, in order to insure the future obedience of the inhabitants, they returned to Damascus. In the following year the Governor Sumpad died, after holding that office ten years. The Saracens then appointed Hamazasb the Mamigonian. Two years after the nation finding the tributes exacted from them by the Saracens oppressive, revolted from their dominion, and again became tributaries of the Emperor, who confirmed Hamazasb in the Government with the title of Prefect.

When this news reached the Caliph of Damascus, he put all the Armenian hostages to death, and commenced preparations to invade Armenia in person, determined to deliver it up to pillage and sword. Before, however, he had time to carry his design into execution, a sedition broke out among his troops, and he was killed. His successor Moaviah having entered into negotiations with the Armenians, prevailed upon them again to renounce subjection to the Empe-

ror, and return to their obedience to the Saracens. Eight months after Hamazasb died having held the government five years. His brother Gregory was appointed governor by order of Moaviah the Caliph of Damascus, in the year 659.

Immediately after a war ensued between the Greeks and the Saracens, which terminated in favour of the latter, in consequence of the treachery of the Armenian general Vart, who betrayed the Greeks into the hands of the Saracens. Vart. however, was severely punished for his treason, and was denied all rest in consequence of his guilty conscience.

In the year 683 numerous banditti from the Khazirs infested Armenia. Gregory the Prefect fell in a conflict with these marauders, after a government of twenty-four years. For about two years after his death, Armenia remained without a governor, in consequence of which perpetual disorder, and trouble afflicted the nation, increased by the horrid devastations of its enemies, who assailed it from all quarters; the people having no allies to whom they could look for assistance.

After the expiration of the above mentioned period a Pakradunian named Ashod, son of one Pewrad, rose from obscurity, and assembling a few troops, attacked and routed the enemies of the nation, took upon himself

the government of the country, and ap
ed his brother Sumpad general of Arn
He then made peace with the Saracens
senting to pay them a yearly tribute.

Justinian the II, the Greek Empero
ticing the separation of the Armenians
the Greeks, directed them to renoun
bedience to the Saracens and return
authority. They replied thus: "How ofter
we been subject to the rule of the G
yet how little assistance have they ren
us in time of our distress? On the con
the reward of our obedience has been i
and insult. Should we at present s
ourselves to your power, our kingdom
be exposed to invasion, we should be
ered up to the sword, and our habitati
pillage. We beseech you then to let
main under the dominion of our p
masters, by which alone our safety an
safety of our nation can be secured.
Emperor enraged at this language, se
army to invade Armenia. Twenty-five
inces became almost depopulated b
fury of the invaders, who took 8000 fa
and sold them as slaves in a foreign
The following year the Emperor agai
an army of 40,000 men to ravag
country. The nation was almost dri
madness and despair by the devast
that were committed. But the miseries

ppy people did not terminate here. The ens imagining that the Armenians had ned to the subjection of the Greeks, also ked Armenia and demolished every ed- on the line of march, carrying away ve a vast multitude of both sexes and ges. Ashod the governor on attempting sist them, was defeated and killed. After vent they retired for a while, but soon ned again with a greater number of s, headed by a general named Mahomed. ey destroyed cities, towns and villages, ey advanced, and taking the fortress van they razed it to the ground, and the garrison as slaves. The Armenians, ied at the fierce nature of their attacks, ndered the government of the country their hands.

the other side the Greek Emperor on ng this, in the year 690 marched in n to Armenia with a large army. people having no other alternative but w to the stronger party, again submit- to the Greeks. The Emperor leaving 00 men to protect the country against Saracens, took hostages from among the nguished Armenian Chiefs and returned onstantinople. Order and tranquillity at length restored, and the government confided to Nerseh Shiragatzi, a man of t and much culture.

## Chapter VII.

### Saracen Governors in Ar

### A. D. 691.

Now our history has reache
691, and 140 of the Armenian
Caliph of Damascus hearing of the
of the Armenians to the Greek
desired to invade the country
he was prevented from putting
into execution by the Greek a
was stationed there. The Greek
were gradually withdrawn fro
and at the expiration of three y
departed. The Caliph then open
tions with the Armenians, an
promises induced them to sub
power. A governor was sent
him, named Abdullah; this occ
fourth year of the government
the Gamsaragan.

Abdullah, accompanied by a
Saracens, entered the city of Duin
to exercise his authority with m
forbearance. This, however,
ruse; soon after he took, on di
texts, several of the chiefs, a

hem in chains, extorted from them their ıost valuable property. Nerseh perceiving ıis, made his escape to Daiks. Abdullah ıught Isaac the Pontiff and Sumpad the eneral, and sent them in chains to Damas-ıs. He then stripped all the great churches Ararat of their treasure, and caused David Duin to be crucified.

Sumpad the General, however, made his ıcape from Damascus, and returning to rmenia, wrote a piteous letter to the Em-ıror Justinian, pointing the distress into hich Abdullah had plunged Armenia. Just-ian ordered Leontius a celebrated general, march into Armenia with a large army. ımpad, on his side, gathered together a w Armenian chiefs, and collecting a few ɔops, took up his position in the city of artanaguerd. Abdullah, at the head of 5000 en, marched against him.

During his absence, (A. D. 694), the reeks arriving in the country of Ararat, en-red the city of Duin and destroyed the houses all his followers. They then hastened to ırtanaguerd, where joining Sumpad, they tacked Abdullah and completely defeated m. Abdullah, however, with ten men es-ped; but those of the Saracens who were ken prisoners, were sold as slaves. Leon-ıs shortly after returned to Constantinople, here being elected Emperor, he appointed ımpad Governor of Armenia.

This Sumpad took up his residenc the fortress of Thukhars in the count the Daiks, and for some time governe country peaceably. But in the year Mohmat Ogba, a renowned Saracen ge again invaded Armenia. Then Nerseh Gamsaragan joined Sumpad, and raisi force from among the people of Vanant, marched against the plunderers. A ensued, in which the Saracens were def with great slaughter. Mohmat Ogba, esc with difficulty, attended by a few horse and arriving at Damascus. inflamed anger of the Caliph against the Armen Another army was collected, and Mol marched again to Armenia, determine wreak his vengeance on all.

Isaac the Pontiff, who was then a pris in Damascus, hearing the calamities were awaiting his countrymen, sent to l mat entreating his permission to accom him in his expedition. His request granted, and the consequence was that l mat effected a reconcilation with the A nians, and all the prisoners who were t during former wars, were released.

Abdullah, who was formerly govern Armenia, some time after was elevate the Caliphate of Damascus. Recollectin defeat at Vartanaguerd, he was not ple at the continuation of the peace, and so

an opportunity of avenging himself on the Armenians. For this purpose he appointed one Cashm governor of Armenia, directing him to slay the Armenian chiefs. Whereupon Cashm contrived to decoy a number of the principal Armenian nobility into the church of Nakhjuan, to which he set fire and they were all burnt alive. The property and the families of his victims were seized, and some were put to death on the cause of their religion.

Sumpad, the late governor, and a few other chiefs, to avoid falling into the power of Cashm, fled into the country of the Egerians, which belonged to Greece. But instead of being received with kindness and assisted, they were treated with contempt. Whereupon feeling themselves agrieved at this treatment, they plundered the city in which they had taken refuge, robbed the churches, and carried off the spoil to Armenia. The Greeks, incensed at their impiety in laying hands on the church, published an anathema which was read annually on Easter day.

In the year 717 Velith was sent as governor of Armenia instead of Cashm. From this period to the reign of the Pakradunians, Armenia continued to be governed by individuals sent by the Caliphs. These governors, contrary to the will of their master, continued to oppress the Armenians with little in-

termission, levying taxes and inflicting fines which were appropriated to their own private use.

After some changes in the government of Armenia, in the year 742, Murwan became the ruler. He was a man of eminent qualities, and in the second year of his sway over Armenia, he handed over the country to Ashod the Pakradunian, and proceeded to Damascus, where he was elevated to the dignity of the Caliphate. Immediately after he confirmed Ashod the Pakradunian in the government of Armenia. Ashod for some time conducted himself with great discretion.

In the course of a few years, on the death of Murwan and the succession of Almansur to the Caliphate, the accustomed tribute imposed by the Saracens on Armenia was much increased. These people were then employed in the construction of Bagdad, whither the throne of the Caliphate was shortly after removed. To enable them to meet their expenses they taxed all the Armenian clergymen, and even the hermits who were inhabitants of the wilderness. Orders also were issued that all crosses should be removed from the tops of the churches, and the people were commanded to repair at all hours of the day and night for public worship, with many other distasteful orders. These grievances pressing hard

upon the people, they determined to revolt. Ashod the governor attempting to resist, was seized by Gregory and David the Mamigonian chiefs, who put out his eyes; fourteen years after this event he died. Yezid succeeded him, and continually harassed the people by the exaction of tributes and abominable extortions. Two years after he was recalled by the Caliph, and Isaac the Pakradunian was appointed governor. He was a man of singular piety, and governed the nation with the most paternal kindness. He was celebrated for his great beauty. During his government bands of lawless men entered the province of Vasburagan from Persia. They were opposed by the two brothers Isaac and Hamazasb, the princes of the Ardzrunians, who in an encounter with them were both slain.

When Gagik, the youngest brother of Isaac and Hamazasb, heard of their deaths, he collected a number of troops, and marching towards that part of Persia from whence their enemies had come, he burnt and destroyed a number of places, putting most of the inhabitants to death. He returned to Armenia, but some time after he was betrayed into the hands of the Persians, who threw him into prison where he died.

About this period the Armenians were thrown into the greatest distress by the

increased exactions imposed upon ther
the Saracens. These were now become
tolerable, and, to increase the evil, a dre
dearth occurred in consequence of a
harvest caused by furious showers of
stones of an enormous size, which cut al
every blade of grass to pieces. This u
tunate circumstance was quickly follow
another still more fatal in its effects. Cl
of locusts overspread the land, and
devoured what had been spared by the
Famine and misery now desolated this
happy country.

Few years after one Bekir was sen
the Caliph as governor of Armenia. He
of a stern and relentless disposition,
fearfully harassed the poor Armeni
Troops were sent by his order into the p
inces of Kaghin and Thalin, where
slew 700 of the inhabitants, and made sl
of 1200 more. He committed many
cruelties. The hated Bekir was at le
succeeded by Hassan by order of the Ca
This governor exceeded all his predece
in tyranny. The nation became sadly
poverished during his sway, the troo
kept, being permitted to exercise the
wanton cruelties on the inhabitants
impunity.

Mushegh the Mamigonian unable to
this any longer, assembled a few t

and attacked some of Hassan's soldiers who had gone to Daron for the purpose of plunder, defeated and killed two hundred of them. Then he procured some reinforcements, and in a second encounter massacred 4000 of them. Then he marched to Duin and taking it by assault, drove out the governor.

The other Armenians inspirited by the conduct of Mushegh, took up arms and revolted against the Saracens. The latter upon this invaded Armenia with 30 000 men, and Mushegh with 5000 men bravely opposed them, aided by the generals Sumpad and Samuel. After a resolute contest, superiority of number on the side of the Saracens prevailed, and the Armenian leaders with 3000 men fell on the field. The remainder fled with the two sons of Sumpad, Ashod and Shabuh. The Saracens immediately began to lay the country waste, but Ashod, surnamed Messaguer (the flesh-eater), procured a few troops and attacked the plunderers who were ravaging the provinces of Ashotze and Dashirs, putting them to flight. Ashod then marched to the province of Shirag, where a similar success attended him. Having expelled thence the Saracen governor Jahab, together with all his forces, Ashod built a city there and named it Ani the Second. It afterwards became the capital of the nation and the residence of the Pon-

tiff. For about six years after this e
menia was a perpetual scene of wa
plunder, sometimes the Saracens be
cessful, at other times the Armen

In the year 786 Yezid the Second
pointed governor of Armenia by th
He succeeded by mildness and pro
tranquillizing the country. But
changed his policy and so cruelly
the people, that 12,000 souls l
country and sought refuge in Gree
twelve years rule Yezid was recalle
Caliph. Khuzima was appointed in h
and by order of the Caliph, he put
the depredations of the troops, and o
restored peace to the nation, trea
chiefs with special marks of favour a
ing received from them the requisite
in token of their allegiance. Some ti
Khuzima began to show the bad si
character, and caused the brother of
tiff Joseph to be strangled. In the t
year of his rule Khuzima died, and im
lv after the country was invaded by

ruler. He was accompanied from Bagdad by Sumpad, the son of Ashod the Messaguer, who had been sent there as a hostage, the Caliph raising him to the dignity of General and allowing him to return to his country.

Some time after Sevata, a Saracen, son of Jahab, having married a Pakradunian maiden named Arusiag, sought to overturn the power of the Saracens in Armenia. By his intrigues he induced Sumpad the general, Isaac the chief of the Sunies, and many other Armenian chiefs, to join in the plot. He then collected a large force and openly declared war. Howl on hearing this, hastily collected 5000 of the most resolute of his troops, and marching with the greatest speed and secrecy, arrived at Sevata's camp on the banks of the river Hurastan. Without giving him the least intimation of his approach, he suddenly fell on the rebel troops, who, taken by surprise, made very little resistance. About one half of them were killed, the rest took to flight. Isaac the Sunian was killed; Sevata and Sumpad with difficulty effected their escape.

After ruling the Armenians seventeen years, with as much happiness to them as credit to himself, Howl was recalled by the Caliph, and the next governor was Pakarad, a Pakradunian and relation of Sumpad the general. During his government, a Persian chief of the name of Baban, having collected

an army, began to make inroads
nia, intending to reduce it to
power. He was opposed by a
100,000 men sent against him by
Mavun; but in the battle that
Saracens were defeated and 30,0
were killed. Baban then marc
conquest of Armenia. In the mear
pad the general, gathered toget
Armenian troops and joined the
Sarances. A second battle then
near mount Ararat, and after a
bloody contest, the Persians w
flight. Baban was taken prisone
the son of Sumpad. He was brough
the Saracen commander, who c
feet and hands to be first cut of
caused him to be crucified.

Pakarad was deposed in the
year of his government, and on
was sent by the Caliph in his ste

The first action of Abuseth w
Pakarad by treachery and send hin
to Bagdad, where he was obliged
to renounce his religion, to avoid
the displeasure of the Caliph.

The inhabitants of Mount Sin
called Sasuns, indignant at Abuse
of faith in seizing Pakarad, took
and falling upon the Saracens q
pectedly, put them to fligt, after

governor. The Caliph thereupon sent an army headed by Pugha, great tyrant, directing him to take vengeance on Armenia for the late defeat. All the Armenian chiefs were to be seized and sent in chains to Bagdad.

All those who were able to carry arms, were to be killed. Any of the people, however, who consented to forsake christianity and embrace the religion of the Saracens, were to be spared, provided they were strong and handsome; if they were the reverse, not withstanding their consenting to abjure their religion, they were to be put to the sword. The dregs of the people he was commanded not to notice, they being beneath the anger of the Caliph.

## Chapter VIII.

### Pugha the tyrant.

### A. D. 850.

It was in the year 850, and 299 according to the Armenian era, that Pugha at the head of a large army advanced into Armenia. He first appeared in the province of Daron, the inhabitants of which were thrown into the greatest terror on his approach. Here he found means to entrap

Ashod and David, the two sons of Pak
Gregory the Mamigonian, with many
chiefs, and sent them all in chains to
dad. He then sent detachments of his
to scour the vallies of Mount Sim, and
parts of the Mountain which were inha
where they massacred every living soul
found.

The Armenians inhabiting the sumi
Mount Sim, urged to desperation a
prospect of meeting the same fate as
countrymen in the vallies, rushed do
great number to attack their enemies
the Saracens being in possession of a
passes of the Mountain, intercepted th
fortunate Armenians, killed a great nu
and made many more prisoners. These
bound with ropes and dragged into the
sence of the governor. Pugha accordi
his instructions, selected the best loo
and put them in confinement, with a
to their being prevailed upon to ren
their religion; the remainder he orde
be butchered before his eyes. A similar
occurred more than once in the other
inces of the country.

The news of these horrors having re
the ears of Ashod, the celebrated chief
Ardzrunians, he determined upon resist
but the other chiefs, without whose a
ance he could effect little, were aver
the plan.

Ashod then, having no other alternative, went to meet Pugha, hoping to mollify him by gifts. But he was deceived; for as soon as he came into his presence, he was cast into chains, and sent with his wife and all his family to Bagdad. Pugha then marched to the province of Vasburagan, and spread his troops all over the land, with orders to seize and bind all who were able to carry arms. As in Daron, he separated the finest men from the rest and put them in confinement; the others were inexorably consigned to death. The slaughter was immense, and, as the records state, human blood manured the land, and the vallies were literally choked up by the corpses of their former inhabitants. Those whom the sanguinary governor spared, were incessantly tormented to embrace the religion of the Saracens, and when it was found that many resolutely adhered to their faith, they were tortured until death relieved them from their sufferings.

From this province he marched to the country about Mount Ararat. Sumpad the general, feeling convinced that all resistance would be in vain, went to Pugha laden with gifts to endeavour to soften him. Pugha, contrary to his usual custom, received the general with kindness and respect, and associated him with himself in all hazardous enterprizes, in all of which Sumpad proved

himself worthy of the confidence which was placed in him.

Pugha shortly afterwards entered the capital Duin, whence he despatched parties of his troops to ravage the provinces of Ararat. The more comely of the inhabitants, as before, were spared and brought to the governor; the others were slain immediately on their falling into the hands of the soldiers.

A few days after they were taken, Pugha commenced persecuting the captives on account of their religion. Many were tortured to such an extent that they scarcely retained a single feature by which they might be recognized. After enduring all that the cruel ingenuity of their tormentors could devise, they were burnt alive.

Among the victims that were hourly exposed to torture and death in the city of Duin, were seven men from the province of Aghpag, the chief of whom was Adom. These were so noble in stature and so beautiful in countenance, that they struck almost every beholder with admiration. Pugha tried every gentle method to enduce them to renounce their faith, but all to no purpose. When he perceived this, he tortured them; but the same power which enabled them to withstand the solicitations of their tormentor, gave them fortitude to endure all the severity with which

reated them. They were afterwards fied.

ıe execution of these and the others n we have noticed, took place in the ; 852 and 853. Johannes the Pontiff equently appointed a day to celebrate the of these martyrs. The inexorable severity e governor at length roused to exertion : of the chiefs who had not yet fallen his hands, and who had taken refuge in s where they could bid defiance to the ıt. These having collected a few troops d themselves in a certain valley, through h one of the detachments of the Sara- had to pass on their homeward march, their prisoners. Here they attacked massacred a great number of them and sed their captive countrymen. Before, ever, they had time to make good their at, they were surrounded by other de- ments of the enemy, and after a brave tance were obliged to surrender.

ı being taken to Pugha, he ordered ı to be first tortured and then decap- d.

ıortly after this the governor despatched ıs to the provinces of the Sunies and ans, there to enact the same atrocities ıey had done in the other parts of Ar- a. They were particularly directed to all the nobles of these provinces, and

especially Vassag the chief of the Sisakans, and Ashod his brother, the sons of Papguen. The chiefs, on hearing this, retired to some inpregnable forts in the province of Paghas. Vassag, however, having delayed rather longer than the rest, was surrounded by the Saracens, but succeeded by a stratagem in escaping from them. On their discovering his flight however, they pursued him with such celerity, that he found there was no hope of distancing them. He then boldly determined to oppose them, and drawing his sword, rushed in amongst them like a wild boar at bay. His valour and strength astonished the Saracens, who seeing him kill all before him, took to flight. Vassag succeeded in overtaking their general, whom he brought to the ground by a blow with his sword, and trampled to death beneath his horse's feet. He then made off eastward, to the country of the Kartmans, whose chief, Garidje, outwardly, gave him a most cordial reception.

A short time after, however, he took the ill-fated Vassag by surprise, and sent him in chains to Pugha. The tyrant was overjoyed at the capture of the chief, and doubled his chains. Immediately after this, the Saracen troops having discovered the position where Vassag's brother Ashod and his mother had taken refuge, surrounded the place and took

them prisoners, with several other chiefs, who were residing with them. They were then sent to Pugha, who loaded them with chains and kept them in strict confinement. Pugha shortly after this, marched with his troops to Artzakh, in the province of Khatchen (in Kharabagh), and captured Adernerseh the chief, with his family, and many other distinguished persons. He also slaughtered thousands of the inhabitants of that province, insomuch, say the old records, that the earth was drunk with the blood of innocent men.

From Khatchen he proceeded to the province of Udi and the country of Kartmans. He laid siege to the castle of the chief Garidje, the betrayer of Vassag, and having taken it loaded him with chains, after putting most of his followers to death. He also captured Stephen, surnamed Gon, chief of the Sevorties, and destroyed his city named Dus.

Pugha then marched to the country of the Aghuans, marking the whole of his route with blood, and desolating the country like a pestilence as he advanced. Isaiah, the chief of the Aghuans, with all his family, together with almost all the chiefs of his nation, fell into the hands of the destroyer, the country exhibiting more the appearance of a slaughter-house than an inhabitated country. From thence Pugha proceeded to Tiflis, where he crucified Isaac the chief of

Vanant, and put to death Mogathel of th
same tribe. He then returned to Duin, a
companied by his captives, led in the mo
degrading form of slavery, and on his arriv
at that city, he assembled together all th
prisoners whom he had taken in Armeni
and then set out on his return to Bagda
The government was delivered over to
Persian named Shekhey, who was invest
with the supreme authority during Pugha
absence.

Pugha persuaded Sumpad the general
accompany him, by solemnly declaring h
conviction that the Caliph, in reward of h
fidelity, would confer upon him the gover
ment of Armenia.

When the Armenian chiefs and other cap
tives were presented to the Caliph at Bag
dad, he spake to them in a threatening man
ner, and ordered Sumpad the general to b
bound and placed with the other prisoner
Then commenced the most horrible persecu
tion. The Caliph only gave them one alte
native, either to renounce Christianity an
embrace his religion, or torture and deat
would instantly follow. Many, unable t
endure the idea of tortures with which the
were threatened, outwardly renounced chris
ianity. Others, more firm, gloriously died i
defence of their faith. Among these latt
Stephen Gon was conspicuous for his unshake

ortitude. Sumpad was more mildly dealt ith. On his refusing to abjure his religion, e was placed in the strictest confinement, here he bitterly bewailed having joined ugha when that tyrant was desolating his ountry. He incessantly prayed to God for is one black act of his life, and during one his earnest supplications to the Almighty n this subject, his soul was released from is body. This event occurred in the year 56, and in the 305th year of the Armenian ra. He was subsequently surnamed the onfessor.

Shekhey the Persian, whom Pugha had ft in Armenia as acting governor, enjoyed hat office four years, and directed affairs in manner which brought as much credit on imself, as ease and comfort to the people.

With these events the government of the Prefects ended. Now we turn to the history of the third royal dynasty, which ruled over Armenia under the name of Pakradunians.

# HISTORY OF ARMENIA

## THE THIRD OR PAKRADUNIAN ROYAL DYNASTY OF ARMENIA

---

### THE PAKRADUNIAN DYNASTY.

The Pakradunians were descended from Abraham, by the line of Isaac.

The first of this family was Sumpad, who came to Armenia during the captivity of his race by Nebuchadnezzar. One of his posterity was the celebrated Pakarad, who lived in the reign of Vagharshag, (p. 74.); he was enobled by that prince by the title of Pakarad the Pakradunian. All members of his family from this time were universally known by the title of Pakradunians.

# THE REIGN

# OF THE PAKRADUNIA

## Chapter I.

### Ashod the first.

### A. D. 856.

On the chiefs of Armenia being
Bagdad, of which we gave an accoun
former pages, Ashod, the son of Sum
Confessor, assumed the government
tribe, the Pakradunians, and exerci
power of General of the Armenians u
prefecture of Shekhey. Ashod by h
and unassuming nature, displayed
amiable disposition, that he was uni
esteemed, both by his own country
well as by strangers.

The Caliph of Bagdad having hea
excellent character of Ashod, and
of shewing how he appreciated it, c
on him the government of Armenia.

to that country a chief named Ali Armeny, the son of Vahé, an Armenian apostate, bearing rich presents and splendid official robes, and directed him to invest Ashod with the supreme power. This occurred in the year of our Lord 859, and of the Armenian era 308. Hence commenced the Pakradunian rule on Armenia.

The first business of Ashod was to improve the condition of the country. He reorganized the army and appointed his brother Abas Commander in Chief. He sometimes resided in the city of Ani, which was built by his grand-father, and sometimes in Erazkavors, that is, Shiragavan, in the province of Shirag.

Ashod had several daughters the eldest of whom was married to Vassag the Sunian, and the second to Gregory the Ardzrunian, otherwise known as Derenik, prince of the province of Vasburagan. To these two, with Vassag the Sisagan chief, and his brother Ashod, were given the principal offices in the state.

Ashod and his chiefs scarcely had succeeded in bringing the country into a tolerably flourishing state, when Jahap, the son of Sevada, of whom we have spoken, invaded it with an army of 80,000 men. Abas, the general, hastened to meet the invader at the head of 40,000 men. Success declared itself in favour of the Armenians, who completely

defeated the enemy, of whose vast number only sixteen men, with Jahap their General, escaped. The river Arax, on the banks of which this encounter took place, was almost choked up by the number of corpses that were thrown into it. The site of the battle was called the Field of the Forties, after the number of the Armenians, and the news of the blow spreading into the adjacent countries, caused the Armenians to be regarded with a feeling of terror.

Henceforward all the care of Ashod was exercised in behalf of his nation, to the great satisfaction of all the Armenians.

George the Second, the Pontiff, and all the chiefs, having observed the satisfaction which Ashod gave all ranks of the people in the administration of his government, drew up a petition to the Caliph, soliciting him to appoint Ashod king of Armenia, promising at the same time not to falter in their allegiance to the authority at Bagdad. The Caliph was well aware of Ashod's merits, and to the great joy of all the Armenians, consented to their prayer. He accordingly sent Ashod a crown with the other ornaments of royalty. Basilius the Emperor, who was an Armenian of the family of the Arsacids, on being made acquainted with this event, also sent him a magnificent crown. Ashod thus patronised by two Emperors,

ascended with great splendour the throne of Armenia. All the ancient royal customs were restored, and Armenia again became a great and flourishing country. Ashod removed the seat of his government to the city of Pakaran. All being regulated in the internal government of the kingdom, Ashod marched with a body of troops towards Mount Caucasus, where the people had recently broken out into rebellion. He succeeded, by conciliatory measures, to restore order there, where also, prior to his departure, he appointed regular governors, on whose skill he could depend.

A short time afterwards (A. D. 886), Ashod's son-in-law, Gregory the Ardzrunian, openly revolted and assumed the government of the two provinces, of Hier and Zarwant. Among the inhabitants of these provinces, however, there were numbers of Mahometans, by whom he was killed in punishment of his fault.

Two years latter quarrels broke out among the people of Vanant and numberless fights ensued. Abas the General, proceeded in reconciling them with each other. No sooner was this effected than the tribe of Kukark revolted. But Sumpad, the son of Ashod, the Governor of the town of Erazkavors, acting with admirable promptitude, gathered a large body of men, and attacking the rebels,

forced them to sue for peace. This being granted, Sumpad retired to the fortress of Shamshouldé, where he thenceforward resided.

Armenia being tranquillized, Ashod set out on a visit to Armenia Minor, accompanied by the prince Meghrig and a body of troops. Thence he passed on to Constantinople, to visit the Emperor Leo, son of Basilius. His reception at that city was magnificent; Leo entreated Ashod to assist him against the Bulgarians, with whom he was at war. Ashod directed the prince Meghrig to remain with the imperial troops. Some time afterwards, when no longer required, Meghrig returned to Armenia Minor, where he took up his residence.

On the return of Ashod from Constantinople (A. D. 889), he fell sick at a place called Karsbar Abaraj, near the province of Shirag. His malady increasing, he sent for George the Pontiff, and received the sacrament from him; after which he caused large sums to be distributed among the poor at the church doors, and in hospitals, convents and almshouses. His last hour approaching, he received a benediction from the pontiff, and then resigned his soul in the seventy-first year of his age. He had governed Armenia thirty-one years; viz: twenty-six as governor and five as king. His remains were

brought to Pakaran, where they were interred with all the magnificence due to a Monarch.

## Chapter II.

### Sumpad the first.

### A. D. 890.

Sumpad the First, son of the deceased Ashod, according to hereditary right, succeeded on the throne of his father. He happened at that time to be in Kukark, from whence he hastened to Erazkavors, where he gave himself up to affliction caused by the loss of his father. Adernerseh, the prince and governor of the Georgians, who was a Pakradunian, came to Sumpad to mourn and condole with him, and with the consent of the Pontiff and nobles, performed the ceremony of crowning Sumpad king of Armenia. Adernerseh thence went to Abas, the brother of Ashod, who was then in the fortress of Kars, to administer the same kind offices of condolence.

Abas, however, had a secret design of supplanting his nephew in the kingdom. He, therefore, seized Adernerseh, put him in chains, and kept him in confinement, in

order to avenge the slight which had been put upon him by this prince in crowning Sumpad and overlooking his claim. He then declared himself king of Armenia, and having many partisans, took up arms. Sumpad also gathered troops to support his claim to the throne. Dissension broke out among the Armenians and an intestine war prevailed, at the end of which Abas was besieged in his fortress of Kars, and was compelled to release Adernerseh. And having a second time meditated rebellion, his accomplices were punished; whereupon deemed it best to beg forgiveness of the king and pontiff; this having been granted, he thenceforward lived a praiseworthy life. On his death, which happened sometime afterwards, Sumpad appointed his own brother Shabuh to the vacant post of Commander in Chief.

The Caliph being informed of all these events which happened A. D. 892, he approved the conduct of Sumpad and sent him a crown, and the ceremony of coronation was again performed. The treaty of his father was once more renewed with the Emperor of Constantinople, and thus Sumpad was firmly established on the throne of Armenia, being regarded with respect and esteem both by his subjects and neighbours.

War, however, soon (A. D. 893) declared itself. Afshin, the Persian governor of Ad-

erbeyjan, jealous of Sumpad's fame, invaded Armenia. Sumpad appeared against him at the head of 30,000 men. But happily, without shedding blood, he succeeded conciliating the Persian general, with whom he made a treaty of peace.

Nevertheless the repeated successes of Sumpad again excited the envy of Afshin, who, in the year 895, marched into the province of Nakhjuan. He endeavoured to conceal his real object by spreading a false report that he had received directions from the Caliph to proceed on a different expedition. Sumpad deceived by this report, neglected to take any precaution. But when the intention of Afshin became apparent, Sumpad retired to a fort, from whence he issued orders to his chiefs to hasten to his assistance. They immediately gathered their forces and advanced to the foot of Mount Arakadz. George the Pontiff, went to Afshin and endeavoured to induce him to make peace. Afshin, however, begged the Pontiff to invite Sumpad to a conference, and this with the object of gaining possession of the king's person. The Pontiff readily complied, but Sumpad refused his consent, upon which the enraged Afshin cast the Pontiff into chains. A battle ensued, in which Afshin was defeated, and obliged to sue for peace. This being granted, he retired to Aderbeyjan, and two months

after released the Pontiff, making h
ransom.

Some time before this event the
Duin rebelled, and Sumpad was obl
lay siege to it. A short time after
taken, an earthquake occurred which d
ed the whole city. Many hundreds
citizens were killed, and record sait
a sufficient number of graves could s
be found for them. The survivors
proceeded to rebuild their ruined ci
received assistance at the hands of S

At this period, Ahmat, the gove
Mesopotamia, revolted from the Cali
assumed independent power in the
of the Aghtznies. He thence attem
extend his power to the country of
but was opposed by Vahan, the son
of Shabuh, the king's brother. Sumj
sisted by his chiefs, at the head of
men, hastened to his assistance. But
of Vasburagan, with the prospect of
ing the throne through Ahmat, betra
Armenians, who, after fighting bravel
compelled to flee from the field, tl
being forced to join them in the flig
Ahmat, far from being elated at the r
this action, returned to his country,
lest he should be cut off in his m
other bodies of Armenians. Gagik, the
proceeded to the city of Van, and w

was rejoicing at the overthrow of Sumpad, he was assassinated by Gagik the Ardzrunian, a nephew of Sumpad.

Shortly after Afshin, observing the quarrels that had broken out between the king and his chiefs, took this opportunity of crushing Sumpad. He, therefore, again invaded Armenia, and Sumpad, unable to resist, was obliged to make peace with him on any terms. This was effected and Afshin took with him to Aderbeyjan, Sumpad's wife, and daughter-in-law, Ashod his son, and Sumpad the son of his deceased brother Isaac.

It was about this time (A. D. 899) that Sumpad conferred on Adernerseh, the Georgian prince, the title of king. This gave the chiefs a pretext for urging Afshin to take up terms against Sumpad. The Armenian king being put to flight, took refuge in the castles and strong-holds of Daics. Afshin advanced in a friendly manner to Duin, and being baffled in his attempt against Sumpad, returned peacefully home, leaving his son Devdat and his chief eunuch to reside for a time there.

Sumpad hearing of the departure of Afshin from Armenia, came to the city of Ani, where he was met by the chief eunuch beforementioned. The eunuch was so much pleased with Sumpad, that on his return to his master, he was loud in his praise. Afshin displeased at this, rebuked him, which so irritated the

eunuch, that he effected his escape to Sumpad together with Ashod the son of the king, and his wife and daughter, who had been detained as hostages. On becoming acquainted with this, Afshin began to make preparations to take revenge on Sumpad. But he fell ill and died before he was able to carry his design into execution. He was succeeded in the government of Aderbeyjan by his brother Yussuf, a man of warlike disposition, cruel and pitiless. Sumpad avoided all communication with him and wrote to the Caliph, proffering the usual tribute, which had been heretofore sent through the governor of Aderbeyjan, directly to Bagdad. The Caliph was pleased at the manner in which Sumpad addressed him, and in return sent him gifts of great value, among which was a royal crown.

The result was, that Yussuf (A. D. 903) marched with an army to Armenia for the purpose of destroying Sumpad. But finding the latter prepared, he retired to Duin, and despatched ambassadors to Sumpad, requesting all hostilities to cease between them. This was done and a treaty of peace was made.

Armenia now enjoyed a little rest, after the incessant troubles which had agitated her since the accession of Sumpad. But about the year 907, the chiefs, much dissatisfied

with Sumpad for increasing the yearly tribute, formed a plot to assassinate him. One was to kill the king, while the others were prepared with their followers to advance into the province of Shirag. Adernerseh, the king of Georgia, was of the number, he was to be appointed king of Armenia. But the plot was discovered, and the conspirators fled. Sumpad was forced to fight against Adernerseh, who was routed and obliged to sue for peace. The rebel chiefs were taken, and had their eyes plucked out.

In the beginning of the following year, Gagik the Ardzrunian, nephew of the king, and chief of the country of Vasburagan, revolted. He went to Yussuf and engaged him in his interests. Yussuf espoused the cause of Gagik, appointed him king of Armenia, and thus divided the country into two distinct factions. He thus sought to overthrow Sumpad's supremacy; but he secretely contemplated the destruction of Gagik, when his rival should be crushed.

He then prepared to march against Sumpad. Joining his forces to those of Gagik and Kurken his brother, he came first to Nakhjuan, where they marshalled their troops and advanced on the country of the Sunies. Here they were opposed by Gregory the prince of that people, and nephew of the king; but Gregory unable to do much

against so large an army, at length r
to his forts. The troops of Yussuf then s
themselves over the land, and all whor
captured were put to the sword. The
came to Duin, where Gregory, observin
all submitted to the conqueror, tender
submission also. But he was put in
confinement.

Yussuf then marched to Shirag, exp
to take the king by surprise; but S
receiveing timely intelligence, took
at Kukark. Yussuf, enraged at the fli
the king, devastated the country and r
ed to Duin. Sumpad came to Erazk
where passed the winter. Ashod, the n
of Sumpad and General of Armenia, s
dered to Yussuf just after the return
latter from Shirag.

At length Yussuf's funds for the pa
of his troops was all exhausted, a
forthwith proceeded to extort money
Gagik and the other chiefs who were
him. Thus Yussuf again was enabled t
the field against Sumpad, and having
that the Sevorties assisted the latter, h
messengers to that people with larg
endeavour to allure them to his own in
"If, said he, Sumpad requests you t
him, go; but in the hour of battle, c
confusion in his ranks and leave him,,.
agreed to do so.

Sumpad gathered an army, of which one part was composed of the Sevorties. He divided it into two parts and confided them to his two sons Ashod and Mushegh. They went to meet Yussuf, and in the battle that ensued the Armenians fought with most desperate valour; so that victory seemed almost certain. But at the moment when the enemy had commenced to give ground, the Sevorties took to flight, according to their stipulation with Yussuf. This caused a panic among the king's forces, who each sought to provide for his own safety. Ashod, fighting bravely, effected his escape; but Mushegh was seized by the same Sevorties and carried to Yussuf, who immediately ordered him to be put into chains.

Now the troops of Yussuf and Gagik spread themselves like devouring locusts over unhappy Armenia, destroying towns and villages with barbaric rapacity. Many of the chiefs conceiving that Sumpad's affairs were in hopeless ruin, made their submission to Yussuf. But their confidence was cruelly repaid; for Yussuf contrived to make away with them, some by poison and others by strangling. Thus perished Gregory the Sunian and Mushegh the son of the king, and many others. Yussuf meditated also the murder of Gagik his colleague and Ashod the General, but deferred this until he could get Sumpad into his power.

About the year 912, Yussuf desired Gagik to take with him the Armenian chiefs and troops, and go to the fortress of Vagharshaguerd, where he would join him and crown him king of Armenia. But when Gagik arrived at Vagharshaguerd, the inhabitants shut the gates and refused him admittance. The troops then were ordered to storm them, but their assault was repulsed by the people of the city. Gagik then returned to Yussuf, but found, on his arrival, that Yussuf entertained very different designs concerning him. He could no longer doubt that Yussuf intended to make away with him. He therefore fled with his brother Kurken. Sumpad also, deserted by his chiefs, and being left helpless, retired to the country of Ararat, and fortified himself in Gabuyd, comonly called the *blue* castle.

Yussuf, finding himself without a foe of any importance, determined to retain the government of the country. On the approach of spring, he joined his own and the Armenian troops together, and proceeded to lay siege to the castle of Gabuyd. Here the besiegers suffered by the determined bravery with which the besieged withstood every assault. Sumpad, observing the dreadful effusion of blood occasioned by these repeated attacks, and unable to suffer the destruction of the Christians, who were brought against him by

Yussuf, directed his men to cease their blows, preferring rather to perish himself than to cause further destruction. He then sent messengers to Yussuf, offering to surrender, provided no harm was done to himself or those with him. Yussuf swore to keep the conditions, and Sumpad went to the camp of his opponent, who received him with much outward respect. A few days later Sumpad retired to the province of Shirag.

But Yussuf being informed that Gagik had taken refuge in the strongholds of his native country Vasburagan, suspecting also that he might find means to join the king Sumpad, in a transport of rage, caused Ashod the General, and all the other Armenian chiefs, who were with him, to be seized and put in chains. He then also found means to entice the king into his power, bound him in chains, took him to Duin and there confined him in a dark dungeon, where he remained for a whole year, scantily fed, and even without a bed upon which to repose. One year after he returned to Duin, Yussuf assembled his troops, took the king and advanced against the castle of Erunjag, where the wives and sons of many Armenian chiefs had taken refuge. All his attempts to take the castle were ineffectual; which so irritated his revengeful mind, that

it caused him to exercise the most horrid barbarities on the unfortunate Sumpad. He first ordered him to be taken to a place where the Armenians, who were in the castle, could distinctly witness all that was going forward, and there to be scourged and tortured. He then caused him to be tortured hourly, with a view to make him deny Christ. But Sumpad remained firm, and after suffering all manner of torments, was at length relieved by death from the cruelty of Yussuf, who caused the body of his victim to be borne to Duin, and there exposed to his subjects on a cross, after having first cut off his head. Thus died, after 24 years of reign, Sumpad the king. Immediately afterwards the castle of Erunjag was taken, through treachery, and laid in ruin. After selecting the wives and sons of the chiefs, as also the most comely inhabitants of the city, caused the remainder to be put to death. A short time afterwards, Yussuf, placing Persian troops in all the cities and places of importance for the purpose of overawing the people, set out for Aderbeyjan, accompanied by a vast number of captives.

## Chapter III.

### Ashod the second surnamed yergat or iron.

### A. D. 914.

On the departure of Yussuf from Armenia, about the year 914, Ashod, the son of the deceased king, gathered a body of 600 men, all famed for extraordinary strength and bravery. With these he traversed the country, every where defeating the Persian troops left by Yussuf, and clearing the country of them. In a short time he became so powerful as to be feared by all the neighbouring powers and even by Yussuf himself.

The Armenians, grateful to Ashod for delivering them from Persian control, placed him on the throne with the title of Ashod the Second. Many of the chiefs, however, were inimical to his just claims, and refused to pay him allegiance. They were a restless discontented crew, perpetually creating disturbances by their quarrels amongst themselves.

The peasents, folloving the example of their chiefs, became inspired with the same love of disorder, and broke out into rebellion; some

of them, having killed their maste
possession of their lands. Yussuf, be
quainted with the anarchy into whi
menia was sunk, collected troops and
marched into that unfortunate c
Towns and villages were destroyed
soldiers, and many horrible barbaritie
mitted against the inhabitants. Age
and women were often tied toget
pairs, and then together cut in pieces
nant women were frequently rippe
and their unborn babes wantonly thro
the air, accompanied by shouts of t
from the inhuman soldiery. Infants, s
at the breast, were torn from the
their distracted mothers, and their
dashed out on the ground.

The motives, which impelled Yu
countenance these barbarities, were
ligious nature: his desire was to com
Armenians to renounce christianit
Armenians, however, persistently resi
his attempts, and suffered death rath
give up their religion.

Agriculture being quite abandoned, the consequence was a sore and dreadful famine; the want of food was so bitterly felt, that villages, towns and cities, were attacked merely for the sake of devouring the slain. Notwithstanding this, hundreds absolutely died of starvation, and it is even related that some individuals were put to death for no other purpose, than to be eaten by men, who were driven to this madness by excess of hunger.

About the year 919, the Emperor Constantine Porphyrogenitus, having heard of these dreadful events, invited the pontiff Johannes and the king Ashod to visit Constantinople, for the purpose of confering as to the best means of restoring order in Armenia. Something prevented Johannes from accepting the invitation; Ashod, however, went to Constantinople, where he was received by the Emperor, with all the honour and respect due to a king. The chiefs who composed his suite, were also honoured according to their respective ranks. After a short time Ashod received from the Emperor a body of Greek troops, and he forthwith returned to Armenia. In all the places through which he passed, he was hailed with acclamations of joy. One city alone, Goghp, showed hostility, but was speedily taken and delivered up to the spoliation of the

soldiers. This city originally belonged to Ashod the General, a cousin of the king, who was then a captive in the hands of Yussuf in Aderbeyjan. The inhabitants of Goghp, making their escape to other villages and towns which owned the jurisdiction of the captive General, endeavoured to make head against the Grecian troops. They were speedily dispossessed of all their places, and their several properties confiscated. After these little disturbances were put down, Ashod dismissed the Greek troops, and fixed the seat of his government at Erazkavors.

Yussuf, seeing that Ashod had succeeded in establishing himself on the throne, produced a pretender to the crown in the person of Ashod the General, whom he released and caused to be proclaimed king. The General on his arrival in Armenia, discovering how the city of Goghp and his other possessions were treated by the king, declared war against him. After many encounters with varying results on both sides, they were reconciled through the offices of Johannes the pontiff.

During this war, Vassag the Gunthunian, chief of the Kukark, observing the differences that existed in the kingdom, declared himself independent. Ashod, as soon as he had concluded a peace with his cousin, marched against the rebel. Vassag, terrified,

shut himself up in the fortress of Shamshuldé. The king finding the place too strong, and without hope of taking it, spread his troops in small parties over the neighbouring land, in order that they might more easily provide themselves with provisions; while he, accompanied by 250 men, proceeded to the fortress of Askouret, and there halted.

Vassag, being informed of all this, came suddenly with 4,000 men, and laid siege to Askouret. Ashod, the king, perceiving his danger, assembled his small party, and after encouraging them, attacked the besiegers. The consequence of their sudden assault was such, that many of Vassag's men were killed, and the others threw down their arms and surrendered. Half of the prisoners being infidels, they had their noses and ears cut off. The others, being christians, were stripped and then released. Vassag was taken prisoner, but in compliance with his most earnest entreaty for forgiveness, was pardoned and reestablished in his office of chief of the Kukark.

Meanwhile the General Ashod, revoked his original agreement to a reconciliation with his cousin, and forcibly took possession of all the towns and villages round the city of Vagharshabad. The king being informed, hastily marched against the rebel General, arrived unexpectadly, and attacked him with

such vigour, that all his opponents w
to flight, and Ashod himself was co
to flee and took refuge in the city c
Johannes the pontiff shortly afterwar
effected a reconciliation between t
cousins.

About the year 922, king Ashod
Sevata, the daughter of Isaac, princ
Kartmans. On this occasion Yussu
meditated to revolt against the Calip
ing to obtain the assistance of A
his projects, sought to enlist his goo
ion by sending him a splendid cro
magnificent royal robes, as also a
cavalry to be kept by him as his own

Ashod the General, restless and
again broke out into rebellion agai
king, who, on the first news, witho
marched against him. He attacked
of Duin where Ashod had taken refu
was repulsed by the citizens. Johan
pontiff, then interceded, and peace w
more restored between them.

Ashod was then obliged to set out
country of Udi, where Moses the g
a warlike and able man, had revolted
him, and had induced the inhabitants
his standard in invading Armenia. Th
accompanied by Isaac his father-
tried by diplomacy to bring the r
obedience; but finding all in vain, he

his army into two detachments, and by a rapid march, took Moses by surprise under cover of night. The rebel troops, struck with consternation, offered but slight resistance and took to flight. Their leader with difficulty made his escape to the country of the Sisagans, and from there shortly afterwards went to the country of the Zanark, where he succeeded in procuring a large body of troops, with whom he again advanced against the king Ashod. Ashod, however, with that promptitude which characterized all his enterprises, hastened to meet Moses. A battle ensued, in which the king having singled out the rebel chief from the midst of his troops, rushed impetuously upon him, and, with a blow of his sabre, clove his iron helmet in twain and inflicted a deep wound on his head. The bravery of the king so much terrified his foes, that they all sought safety in flight. Moses was taken wounded and had his eyes burnt out with a hot iron. Order was restored in Udi, and a man named Amram, appointed governor; he was a man of gigantic strength and was surnamed Zulig, or "the little bull,,. The king then returned to the province of Shirag.

But while Ashod was engaged in this expedition, his brother Abas, conspired with his father-in-law, Kurken, the prince of Apkhazes, to take away his life. On the

rebel brother Abas, to the country
Here he collected troops and mai
Apkhazes, the country of Kurken, v
ravaged and almost ruined.

On the other hand the conspirat
ceeding to the palace and not fin
king, were seized with shame ai
They plundered all the property be
to the king, which they could find, a
proceeded to ravage the country
appeared against them and several
ensued. In the end they were reconci
each other, through the mediation o
the Sunian. Some time afterward
detected this same Vassag in an act o
ery against himself and caused hi
put in chains and confined in a
Isaac, the father-in-law of the kin

the king, and regarded Adernerseh, the king of the Georgians, with no better feeling, broke out into rebellion against these two princes. Ashod and Adernerseh joined their forces and attacked the rebel, who was supported by Apas, the brother of the king and General. Victory declared itself for the two kings, and the rebels were routed with great slaughter, and obliged to sue for pardon.

While Ashod was engaged in setting this disturbance, another faction broke out fomented by his father-in-law Isaac. This prince secretly gathered a body of 8000 men, and with them advanced into the country of Udi, reducing every thing to a state of desolation. Then Isaac marched to the country of Kukark, and took possession of the fortress of Gayan, where he released Vassag, who was confined there by the king, together with the wives of some of the rebellious chiefs. He then advanced to another fort, which he reduced and put all the garrison to the sword. Then destroying the corn in the fields, and devastating the country, he retired to the mountainous districts of the Kukarks.

The king, thunderstruck at this intelligence, hastily selected 300 of his bravest troops, and accompanied by a bishop and a few priests, on being informed where Isaac and his men lay, proceeded towards him. Having ascended a hill, near which Isaac

his message in person with my
Then he advanced and surrounded
on which the king had taken up his
The king, at the head of 200 men
others being exhausted by fatigue,
ed the hill and attacked Isaac. His
were crowned with the most compl
cess. It is said that so great was the
that only two men, out of the who
escaped with life. These were Isaac
son Gregory, who were taken prisor
brought into the presence of the ki
had their eyes plucked out and were
to go where they choose. The provinc
was subjugated, and thenceforward
as one of the possessions of the kin

Ashod then returned to Duin
shortly after, taking a small det

was in alliance with him, and being furnished by this monarch with Egerian cavalry, he entered Udi. Amram was encamped in a thick forest near the river Gur, an unfavourable position for the evolutions of Ashod's troops. A fortress, however, was found near at hand, which happily was unoccupied; the passages of this also were extremely narrow and easy to defend. Here the royal troops sought repose.

Amram, being informed of the king's retreat, hastened to surround it. By this action the people within were unable to procure any kind of provisions, not even water, the fortress being on an acclivity. The troops of Ashod giving way to despair, entered into communication with the enemy, and engaged to bind and deliver up the king, provided they were permitted to leave the country unmolested. Ashod, becoming acquainted with his danger, in the middle of the night mounted a very swift horse, and going through the narrow passages of the fort, darted into the midst of the enemy's cavalry, and thus made his escape, killing all who opposed him. Amram enraged, entered the fort, and after plundering those whom he found there, he permitted them to depart to their country.

Ashod then took refuge in the castle of Gakavakar, from whence gathering a body

of 100 men he sought shelter in the isle of Sevan. One of his most attached chiefs, named George, of the tribe of Marzbedunians, at the head of twenty men, traversed the country and endeavoured to recruit the forces of his master, but met with very little success. The greater part of the chiefs, distrustful of each other, remained shut up in their strongholds, studying their own private interests, rather than those of their king and country.

About this time Gagik assumed independent power over the country of Vasburagan. He built a splendid city on the island of Aghthamar situated in the sea of Puznunies.

Now Yussuf learning that Ashod had retired to the isle of Sevan, sent a chief, named Nusir, to reduce the whole nation and to capture Ashod the king. Nusir proceeded to Duin and imprisoned several people; he endeavoured also to seize the pontiff Johannes, but the latter apprehensive of his safety, took refuge in an other place. Shortly after Nusir was recalled by Yussuf, and on his departure from Armenia, he left a chief named Bishr to succeed him.

Bishr being informed of the situation of king Ashod in the island of Sevan, selected from his army 1,000 powerful men, and pushed forward to attempt the capture of

the island and king. He desolated all the country over which he passed. He was met by George the Marzbedunian, who at the head of twenty men, attacked the spoilers. The little band, in their devotion to their king and to their country, rushed to the assault with as much skill as courage, and killed a great number of the enemy, compelling the rest to flee.

Bishr, exasperated at his defeat, gathered a large number of troops, and went in pursuit of George the Marzbedunian. Being unable to discover his retreat, he marched toward the island of Sevan to take the king. On arriving at the sea-shore, he pitched his camp within sight of the island.

Ashod undaunted, prepared ten vessels, in each of which he placed seven archers, all so extremely skilful with the bow, that their arrows never missed. These vessels were directed to anchor along the shore and gall the enemy with continual discharges of arrows. When these archers began to discharge their arrows, terror seized upon the enemy; for, each arrow was guided with such precision, that it never missed killing or wounding the object against whom it was aimed. At length the enemy seeing that each moment added to their loss, fled, leaving their camp at the mercy of the victors.

Bishr enraged at this failure of his expedition, marched against the fortress of Kegha, on which he determined to wreak his vengeance. But George the Marzbedunian was there with his few followers; he therefore sallied out and made a gallant charge upon Bishr's troops, marking his progress by heaps of slain. Bishr had his horse's legs broken; he, however, with difficulty effected his escape, followed by his troops. But George's followers also were so much reduced, that they were obliged to discontinue their exertions. Upon which the inhabitants of Kegha and other fortresses, being afraid of Bishr's future operations, left them and took refuge in other places. Bishr on hearing this, took possession of them.

Shortly after these events, Nusir returned again to Armenia, and took up his residence in the city of Duin. He thenceforward governed the Armenians in peace, desisting from all persecution. Ashod the king died shortly after, having observed with satisfaction the peaceful state of Armenia. He reigned fourteen and a half years..

## Chapter IV.

### The reign of Apas.

### A. D. 928.

n the year 928, Apas succeeded his ;her Ashod Yergath, on the throne of ıenia. He fixed the seat of his govern- ıt at Kars, in Little Vanant, and shortly r he made a tour through the whole of dominions, and with the assistance of renowned George Marzbedunian, cleared country of all the hordes of depredators, ıch had hitherto infested it. The kingdom v assumed a new aspect, every thing ap- ring to enjoy rest and peace. Many of self-exiled Armenians, both clergy and y, who lived retired mostly in the ntry of the Egerians, having heard that ər was once more established in their ntry, returned to their own homes.

ıt this epoch, A. D. 935, some of the chiefs, ɔnging to Grecian Armenia, became atly celebrated. Among these we parti- ırly notice Johan, Kurken and his brother ɔphilus. The former, in consequence of valour, was appointed General of the tern division of the Greek army, and in

In the year 950 Gagik, the Arzrı
king of Vasburagan, died, after a re
twenty nine years. He was succeeded
government of Vasburagan, by hi
Ashod, surnamed Derenik after his g
father. Ashod shortly after, at the instig
of certain calumniators, removed his fa
old General, Abulkharib the Havnuni
warlike and skilful man, from his offic
appointed one Serkis in his room. Abu
rib irritated at this slight, raised a
Ashod the powerful prince of the provi
Hier and Zarawant, who after devast
the province of Antzevatzies, took
Derenik prisoner and carried him to
where he caused him to be incarce
When the prince had occasion to mak
cursions into the country on pleasu
business he caused the unfortunate

liberate the captive. He secretly sent a message to Ashod, directing him, the first time that he should be taken from his prison to afford sport to the people of Hier, to make off with all speed to the sea side, where he would be in readiness to assist him. Accordingly on a certain day, Ashod, after suffering all manner of ill treatment, he suddenly put spurs to his horse, and made for that part where Abulkharib awaited him. The people immediately pursued him, but Abulkharib and his followers coming between them and the fugitive, beat them back and drove them to the city, where they shut the gates against him; Abulkharib then by an effort of wonderful strength, struck his sword deep into the wood-work of the gate, and returned to secure the retreat of Ashod. They proceeded to Vasburagan, where Ashod again ascended the throne, and Abulkharib was raised to high office in the state. Ashod Derenik died, after having reigned fourteen years, and was succeeded by his youngest brother Abusahl Hamazasb.

About the year 943, Apas, the king of Armenia, erected a splendid church in Kars. On the occasion of its consacration, Ber, king of the Apkhazes, who was in enmity with Apas, marched to Armenia at the head of a large body of troops, and encamped on the banks of the river Gur. He sent a message

to Apas, saying, that he was going to consecrate the newly built church himself. Apas irritated, assembled his followers, and accompanied by George the Marzbedunian, set forward, determined to chastise Ber. He halted that night on the opposite bank of the river, near which Ber was encamped. The next morning at the down of day, George, with a few of selected men, crossed the river and attacked the enemy. In the mean time Apas' men also, tormented them with showers of arrows; so that at length Ber was obliged to retreat.

Ber, vexed at this defeat, rallied his troops in the course of that day, and on the following crossed the river and took the Armenian camp by surprise. The greatest confusion prevailed at first, but at length, through the courage of Apas, they were inspired by a prospect of victory, and finally the assailants were put to flight, suffering great slaughter. Ber was taken and brought in fetters to the newly built church, where he had his eyes plucked out. News of this event reaching Apkhazes, the people were plunged into an agony of grief. They sent great gifts by their chiefs, whom they deputed to make a treaty of peace, which was successful, and they also obtained liberation of their eyeless prince.

Apas, the king, having attained an ad-

ced age, died, after swaying the sceptre nty four years. He left two sons, Ashod Mushegh.

## Chapter V.

### HOD THE THIRD AND SUMPAD THE SECOND.

### A. D. 951.

Ashod, surnamed the Charitable, ascended throne of Armenia in the year 951. He lected 2000 men, all of undaunted courage, d cleared the country from the marauders, o had begun to make incursions in the gdom. Having thus tranquillized the ntry, he increased his army to 80,000 n, and appointed Gore, the son of the nous George, General. Ashod with this ce achieved many great exploits, and came the terror of the foes, and the glory the friends of his country.

At the expiration of nine years after his cession to the crown, the Armenian chiefs ewing with admiration the valour, pru-nce, and piety of their king, invited the ng and pontiff of the Aghuans into Arme-a, and assembling all the nobles of the ngdom, with Ananias their Pontiff, in the y of Ani, there solemnly crowned Ashod

their king; this ceremony from the various factions that had divided the country, not having hitherto been performed. Mushegh, the brother of the king, had contrived sometime before to procure adherents from amongst the chiefs, and assumed royal authority in Kars; but on all occasions where they met, he showed the greatest obedience to his brother, and assisted him when required. Ashod did not like to oppose the wishes of Mushegh with regard to his assumption of independent power.

During the reign of this monarch, David chief of the Daics, in the divison of the Greeks, became greatly celebrated for his valour and good conduct, and was much in favour with the Emperor, who conferred upon him the government of that country.

In the year 962, Armenia was invaded by the Saracens, under the command of a chief named Hamdun, who had rebelled from the Caliph. Hamdun was defeated and killed in a battle fought shortly after his invasion, and the Caliph, on being informed of it, was so pleased with Ashod, that he sent him magnificent presents, among which was a double crown.

Ashod much improved his kingdom; he built the inner castle of the city of Ani, and fortified all the places of importance he possessed. He derives his greatest fame, however,

om his private virtues. Having built a
mber of hospitals, infirmaries, and alms-
uses, he made it a point to visit them
equently; here he indulged in the greatest
miliarity with the poorest; and even, it is
id, often invited the sick, leprous, and
aimed, to sit and eat with him at his own
ble. So unbounded was he in his donations
the poor, that on his death not a single
ace of money was found in his treasury.
ence he was surnamed the charitable. After
e twenty-sixth year of his reign, Ashod
e charitable died A. D. 977. Not long after,
busahl, king of Vasburagan, also died, and
s succeeded by his eldest son Ashod.

Ashod left three sons; Sumpad, Gagik, and
rken. Sumpad being the eldest, on the
cease of Ashod his father, succeeded him
the throne of Armenia, by the title of
mpad the Second. On the same day his
her died, he was crowned in the city of
i. The country being thrown into a little
nfusion by the change of its ruler, Sumpad
oceeded to tranquillize it. He became ex-
edingly powerful, and was honoured with
e title of Conqueror and King of kings.

In the year of our Lord 979, this monarch
t about fortifying the city of Ani. He first
rrounded it with a wall of exceeding great
ight and thickness, on which he raised
fty towers for the station of its defenders.

He then caused a trench of amazing depth and breadth to be dug outside, so as to encompass all the city and works, the whole being faced with stone and bricks. This was a work of such magnitude that it took him eight years to finish it. In the city of Ani he built such a number of churches, that, added to what were there before his accession, they amounted on the whole to the surprising number of 1001. This circumstance gave rise to a curious practice in use with the common people of Armenia, who, on making a solemn assertion, would swear by the 1001 churches of Ani. Sumpad caused the foundation of a very large church to be laid in the city by the architect Tiridates, in the year 989; but was prevented finishing it by the hand of death.

About the year 984 Mushegh, king of Kars and uncle of king Sumpad, died, and was succeeded in his authority by his son Apas. Previous to his accession to the throne, Apas bore the character of an ignorant and idle youth; but on his assuming the reins of his government, he changed and displayed such a talent that all were astonished. He instituted schools for the instruction of the poor, and devoted a considerable time to the detection and reform of abuses in his kingdom.

At this time Vasburagan was invaded by Abuthelb, chief of Koghthen, at the head of a

large force. Ashod the Ardzrunian, who then held the throne of Vasburagan, sent against them the general Abulkharib, nephew of the celebrated general of the same name. Abulkharib advancing to the province of Jhuash, pitched his camp in the place called Paguiar. But suddenly, being surrounded by the army of Abuthelb, he succeeded in conducting his men into a fortress, not far distant from his camp, and there prepared for defence.

The enemy, however, plundered all they found in the deserted camp; then approaching the fortress, sent a message to the Vásburaganians, declaring upon oath, not to injure them, provided all gave up their arms and came out. This being done, the besiegers violating their oath, rushed upon their defenceless victims, and massacred them. Abulkharib and two other chiefs, were spared, and afterwards released.

Ashod the king, after swaying the sceptre of Vasburagan fourteen years, died. As he had no sons, the royal authority was exercised by his two brothers, Kurken, governor of the Antzevatzies, and Sennacherib, governor of the Rushdunians.

In the meantime Sumpad king of Armenia, A. D. 989, elated by the prosperity which of late enjoyed, became vain and arrogant, and disregarding all decency, and the regulations of the church, publicly espoused his

own niece. At her death, which happen
only a short time afterward, the king f
ill, and quickly followed her.

## Chapter VI.

### Gagik the first.

### A. D. 989.

The successor of the deceased Sumpa
was Gagik the First, his brother. This prin
was far wiser and a greater lover of pea
than many of his predecessors. He wa
however, by no means deficient in courag
he expelled several usurpers, who had
force taken possession of certain castles a
cities, at the latter part of the reign of t
late monarch. He was also a good suppor
of the church. It was at this period that t
pontifical government of the Armenians w
fixed in Ani, the reigning Pontiff making
his residence A. D. 992.

During the reign of this Monarch, t
Emperor Basilius, having seized a gr
number of the Armenians situated in l
division, transported them to the country
the Bulgarians. The Armenians, united wi
the Bulgarians, appointed their general c
Samuel and revolted. Hereupon a war ensu

in which the Greeks were defeated and driven out from the country. Samuel then assumed sovereign authority over the Bulgarians. The Emperor then entered into negotiations of peace, to which Samuel agreed, on condition that the former bestowed upon him his sister in marriage. The Emperor consented, but in room of his sister sent a servant maid, accompanied by the metropolitan of Sebastia. Samuel, having perceived the cheat, burnt the metropolitan alive. The Emperor then marched in person to Bulgaria; Samuel fought and defeated him. He, however, rallied his army, and in a second encounter Samuel was killed. Another leader was appointed, and the Emperor again was defeated.

In the year 996, David, chief of Daics, who was appointed governor of that country by the Emperor, seeing that foreigners had usurped the government of Manazguerd, marched against them and drove them out of the country. These foreigners having hired troops from the Medes, Persians and the people of Khorasan, amounting to 00,000 men, again entered Manazguerd. David, on hearing this, asked assistance from Gagik and Kurken, kings of Armenia and Georgia, each of whom sent him an army of 6,000 men, and forming an army of 20,000 men, marched against the invaders. Notwithstanding their number, after a well contend-

ed battle, they were defeated with great slaughter and driven out.

The fame of the brave general being spread abroad, David was greatly esteemed by the neighbouring nations. But the envy and jealousy of the chiefs of the country of Daics being excited, they put an end to his life by poisoning him.

Some time after, A. D. 1003, died also Kurken the Ardzrunian the governor of Antzevatzies, and his brother Sennacherib reigned alone in Vasburagan.

In the year 1019 died also Gagik, king of Armenia, in ripe old age, after a prosperous reign of thirty years.

## Chapter VII.

### Johannes Sumpad.

### A. D. 1020.

At the death of Gagik, his eldest son Johannes, surnamed Sumpad, succeeded on the throne of Armenia. He was of an indolent habit of body, increased by his excessive corpulence, which prevented his ever engaging in military exploits. His brother Ashod was exactly opposite in disposition to the king. He possessed great talent for command,

courage which feared no opposition. refore despising the quiet nature of g's character, openly aspired to the This coming to the knowledge of e, the Georgian king, he sent an am- or to Johannes, together with a royal and thus recognised his right to the m. Hereupon Ashod flew to arms; but jority of the people aided the king, army of 40,000 infantry and 20,000 being formed, Ashod fled to Vasbu-

nacherib, the king of that country, ied him with a large army, and he ig again Armenia, pitched his camp ni. Johannes being encouraged by the an ambassador, gave battle to Ashod. nbassador, however, having challanged to single combat, was literally divided by a terrific strock given by Ashod on ad. The king's army was defeated and d to the river Akhurian. Ani now was ed by Ashod; but through the media- the king of Georgia, Peter the Pontiff, her people, a reconciliation was effect- d established on oath, that Johannes continue to reign, and Ashod should his lieutenant.

ertheless Ashod, being always torment- the desire of reigning, determined to r his brother. He therefore caused a

trap to be formed in his bed-chamber, and then taking to his bed, sent to inform Johannes that he was sick even to death. The affectionate Johannes immediately set off to visit him; but no sooner had advanced to the bed on which Ashod lay, than the floor gave way, and he was precipitated into the trap. He begged for his life, but it would have gone hard with him, if Abirad, a powerful chief, had not drawn him out of the trap and placed him again on the throne. Abirad however, fearing the machinations of Ashod, fled to Duin, which was governed by the Caliph's deputy Abusvar; but soon after he was killed there.

The ill conduct of Ashod served to estrange most of the Armenian chiefs from him. Ashod finding his enemies daily becoming more numerous, retired to Constantinople, where he succeeded to obtain from the Emperor Basilius a supply of Greek troops, with which he returned to Armenia. He subdued the chiefs, cleared the country of all depredators and ruled it in his capacity of lieutenant.

It was about this period, A. D. 1021, that the Scythians made an invasion into Media, from which they marched to Vasburagan. Sennacherib the king, sent against them his troops with his general Shabuh. The Scythians had a peculiar way of fighting;

y always avoided a close combat, but ›ping at a distance they had always a ided advantage, by throwing their arrows ›h such precision and quick succession, ›t few could withstand them. Shabuh erving this, instantly met them; the ythians surprised at such unexpected as-lt, fled and evacuated the country.

This invasion of barbarian people being ›dicted by St. Nierses, Sennacherib began think about it; he sent for the chiefs of › country and his own relations, and ›posed to them to make over Vasburagan the Emperor Basilius, and to solicit in its ad Sebastia with its dependencies.

All consenting, an ambassador was sent Basilius and the contract was stipulated. sburagan, comprising 4000 villages, ten es and seventy-two castles, was given to Emperor. Sennacherib with his family, ›ps and one third of the inhabitants, ounting to about 400,000 souls, took pos-sion of Sebastia in the year 1021, Arme-n Era 470.

Shortly after, the Scythians, under their nce Tughril Beg, entered the province ;, where they committed horrid devasta-is, burning the churches and forcing the abitants to deny their faith. On their ad-ıcing farther into Armenia, they were acked by Vassag the General of the Arme-

nians, who defeated them. Tughril Beg then marched into Persia, and subjugating the country took possession of the throne, and reigned under the title of Sultan.

About the year 1022, Johannes the Armenian king, being apprehensive of a hostile visit from the Scythians, sent Peter the Pontiff to the Emperor Basilius, to propose, that if he would protect Armenia from these terrible foes, he would engage to deliver to the Greeks, at his death, the city of Ani with its province. The Emperor consented and received from the Pontiff a promise in writing.

In the year 1026, Sennacherib died, and David his eldest son succeeded to the throne. About the year 1028, Constantine, the brother of Basilius who had succeeded him, having fallen sick, desired to see an Armenian priest. One Guiragos, a priest, was brought to him when drawing from his bosom the paper formerly given by Johannes, the Armenian king, to Basilius, for the delivering of Ani, delivered it to the priest conjuring him to take it back to Johannes, and to declare it to him, saying, that he would never consent to take advantage of the distress of that monarch. The priest took the paper but did not act according to his instructions, until the year 1034, when Michael became Emperor. To this Guiragos gave the paper, receiving from him many gifts instead. The Emperor overjoyed, waited for the death of Johannes.

In the following year, 1029, died Apas the
ng of Kars, and was succeeded by his son
agik.

In the year 1038, an event took place
Vasburagan. The Persians had taken the
ty of Pergry. The Greek governor of
asburagan attacked the city, took posses-
on of it, and imprisoned the Persian gov-
nor Khudrik. On news having reached
ersia, a large force advanced, the city was
gain attacked and taken, and Khudrik was
berated. An Armenian chief then collected
few troops, and suddenly entering the city,
illed a great number of the infidels. A few
them, however, with Khudrik, made their
scape to the citadel, where they suffered
orrible privations, being scantily provided
ith provisions, and having no means of
rocuring water. The Greeks and the Arme-
ians knowing this, gave themselves up to
ndulgence and pleasure. The Persian chiefs
eing informed of the capture of Pergry,
arched with secrecy and haste, took the
ty by surprise, killing all the Armenians
nd Greeks that fell into their hands. Khudrik
nd his companions were then relieved, from
eir confinement; but so wild was the former
his rage, that having caught a number of
hristians, he caused them to be butchered
a trench made for the purpose, until their
ood filled it, when he satisfied his revenge

by bathing in it. The following year, however, the Greeks again captured Pergry.

In the year 1031 died Johannes, king of Armenia, after a reign of twenty years. Shortly after died also his brother Ashod. Two years before, David the Ardzrunian, king of Sebastia, died, and as he had no male children, he was succeeded by his brother Adom, assisted in the government by his youngest brother Abusahl.

## Chapter VIII.

### Gagik the Second and the last of the Pagradunian kings.

### A. D. 1039.

After the death of the late king, there was an interregnum of two years. One of the chiefs, named Vest Sarkis, prince of the Sunies, and of some influence in the nation, aspired to the crown. All was in agitation about the validity of his pretensions, when the Emperor Michael, A. D. 1040, being apprized of the death of Johannes, sent an ambassador and demanded Ani and its province, according to the stipulation made by the late monarch. The Armenians refused to acknowlege the justice of the claim, upon

hich the Greeks invaded the country, and
ded by Sarkis, made horrid devastations.
hen they arrived in the province of Shirag,
e Armenian chiefs assembled together and
pointed the old Vahram General to lead
em against the Greeks. Vahram selected
body of 30,000 infantry and 20,000
valry, and dividing them into three di-
sions, marched against the Greeks, and
ve them battle. The invaders were routed
ith great slaughter, and the effusion of blood
as so great, that the waters of the river
khurian, near which the battle was fought,
ere dyed completely red. Many of the fugi-
es were drowned, others escaping to desert
aces, perished through want, the remain-
r implored mercy and were spared. On news
aching Constantinople, the Greeks deter-
ined to take the most signal vengeance
the Armenians; but they were obliged to
spend their design by some civil commo-
n that broke out amongst them.

In the mean time Sarkis, aspiring to the
own of Armenia, caused himself to be
cognised king of Armenia, and fixed him-
lf in the city of Ani. Vahram then gathering
e chiefs, and also Peter the Pontiff, to an
sembly, it was agreed to call young Gagik,
e late king's nephew, to the throne. Here-
on he was invited into the city of Ani,
d in his sixteenth year, he was crown-

ed king of Armenia, in the year 1042. This prince, although of so immature an age, was, it may be said, ripe in wisdom. He was well skilled in the sciences, in the greek literature and in the Holy Scriptures. In person he was of a commanding height and pleasing countenance, in natural endowments quick and penetrating, and in habits abstemious, persevering, and prudent. According to contemporary writers, he shone as the only precious stone his kingdom contained. The Almighty, however, had decreed the speedy destruction of the kingdom of Armenia.

Vest Sarkis seeing Gagik firmly established on the throne, gathered his adherents, and retired to the citadel of Ani. The king being informed of this, went alone to him and persuaded him to evacuate the place. Sarkis then retired to the castle of Surmary; but soon he commenced making depredations. The king being informed, took a few resolute men and set out against Sarkis; he took him prisoner and threw into prison. But on his expressing contrition for what he had done, Gagik released him and even made him his friend. Gagik's attention was now all turned to the regulation and reform of his kingdom.

Shortly after Armenia was invaded by a numerous horde of Scythians. Gagik im-

ıediately assembled an army of 16,000 ıen and marched against them. He encamp- d near the banks of the river Hurastan, on he opposite side of which lay the enemy. ſagik caused 6,000 men to hide in ambush, hen with the remainder pretended to flee. 'he Scythians, supposing that the Arme- ians were afraid and had fled, crossed the ıver and pursued them. Suddenly the pur- ıers were assailed by those who were in mbush, and at the same moment Gagik ıith the main body turned and charged upon ıem. The most horrible slaughter ensued; ıultitudes were drowned in the attempt to ross the river, and a few made their escape ) Gordjaik. Here they received reinforce- ıents, and after a little rest invaded Vas- uragan.

They were opposed by a very powerful ıan, named Lion Khatchig, at the head of ıventy men. This Khatchig had a son whom e tenderly loved; on his setting out to meet ıe invaders he insisted upon his son's re- ıaining at home. But Ishkhanig, the son, nable to endure the anxiety he felt about ıe safety of his father, shortly after set out to ıin him. He arrived just at the moment when is father was engaged in a warm struggle, nd giving way to the ardour of his youth, ıshed into the thickest of the fight. Unfor- ınately he was slain in presence of Khatchig,

who giving way to his grief, became insensible to every thing but the bloody corpse of his son; the weapon fell from his hand and he was immediately killed by a host of swords. Khatchig's men fled, and the enemy despoiled the province.

Khatchig, however, had two sons, who, at this period were in Constantinople. They having heard the tragical end of their father and brother, obtained 5,000 men from the Emperor and returned to their country to revenge their deaths. Being informed that the Scythians were in the province of Hier, they, without delay, advanced thither, and found them already prepared to receive them. The two brothers called aloud and demanded the murderers of their father; upon which two Scythians of gigantic stature presented themselves. A single combat was engaged in; but the conflict was short between simple courage and valour inspired by filial and fraternal piety. The two Scythians perished at the same moment; then their troops were charged, and the barbarians, after a loss of 3000 men, took to flight. The two brothers then returned to their country.

## Chapter IX.

### 'he exile of Gagik from his kingdom.

### A. D. 1043.

Now Gagik, by a prudent management of e revenues of his kingdom, and a just ad-inistration of the government, became ceedingly powerful and popular. Mono-achus, who had succeeded Michael the Fifth . the imperial throne at Constantinople, newed his claims to the city of Ani. He nt several times messengers on this object, it Gagik was inflexible in his determination retain his capital.

Monomachus then sent to Armenia a large rce; but it was defeated and driven out om the country. A new army was sent gain, but with the same result. Then the mperor wrote to Abusvar the infidel govern-r of Duin, soliciting him to ravage Arme-ia. Gagik, however, gained Abusvar to his nterests.

The king then looking about him, suspect-d that Vest Sarkis was the instingator of hese continual agressions of the Greeks, nd seizing him was about to put him to leath. But the traitor found means to declare

himself innocent, and to throw the blame upon others. Thus enmity was created between the king and other chiefs, whom Vest Sarkis continually instigated against their master, endeavouring to make him an object of hatred.

An opposition to the king now being formed by Sarkis and several of the chiefs, they wrote to the Emperor how he might succeed in his project. Upon which the Emperor invited Gagik to visit him at Constantinople. Gagik was unwillingly to accede to the Emperor's wish, and principally because some of the chiefs, who were attached to him, advised him on no account to quit the country. Nevertheless being pressed continually by the Emperor and also assured on oath, that no harm was intended him; being urged also by the chiefs of the faction, who solemnly swore before the Pontiff not to permit the Greeks to take Ani; fearing that they would rebel if he did not comply with their request, at length determined to go to Constantinople. He made over the city to the particular care of the Pontiff, appointing one Abirad, his favourite, as governor, and placing under his charge the Armenian army. He gave his palace in charge to Vest Sarkis, and then accompanied by a few troops and the most devoted of his friends, set out on his journey. On his approach to

ıstantinople the nobles of the city came ; to receive him in great pomp; he was ıducted with great respect to the Emperor .o received him with every honour.

After a few days residence at Constanti- ɔle, the Emperor put to him the old ɜstion about the city of Ani, offering, if gik would consent to give it up, to place his possession the city of Melitene in menia Minor, with the province in which stood. Gagik refused, upon which the ıperor violating all faith, placed him in ıfinement on an island.

When the news of this reached Armenia, chiefs divided into two factions; when length that of Vest Sarkis prevailing, ıy wrote to the Emperor, and sending him keys of the city, gave it to him with its provinces. The Emperor then drew out gik from his confinement, and showing ɑ the letter of the chiefs, the unfortunate ıg was at last obliged to consent. Monochus gave him instead of Ani, the city of ːu and other lands on the frontiers of Cappocia, together with a magnificent palace Constantinople, and a pension from the ɜek Government. This happened in the ır 1046.

Thus was the kingdom of Armenia comtely destroyed, nothing more of it remain- ; in the possession of its exiled sovereign,

who, consumed by care, mourned over the downfall of his nation and his house.

On the exile of Gagik, Abusvar, the infidel governor of Duin, began to persecute the Armenians, compelling them to renounce their faith. Vahram, the old General, collecting a few Greek and Armenian troops, attacked the tyrant and drove him to the gates of Duin. Here a dreadful contest took place, in which Vahram, in his eightieth year was killed together with his son.

The Greeks now sent a governor to the city of Ani from Greece, named Camenas; they were determined to destroy the nation entirely.

## Chapter X.

### The slaughter of the Armenians by Tughril, and the severity exercised upon them by the Greeks.

### A. D. 1048.

During the first three years of the exile of Gagik, A.D. 1048, the troops of Tughril twice made incursions into Armenia. The first time to the number of 100,000 men, they desolated twenty-four provinces, as far as Passen. The second time their numbers a-

mounting to 200,000 men, they almost completed the ruin of that part of the country, carrying into captivity all the inhabitants.

In the year 1049, they made a third invasion, and besieged the city of Ardzen, the population of which amounted to 300,000 souls, and which contained 800 churches. Notwithstanding the resistance of the inhabitants, it was taken and 140,000 people were massacred; the remnant were carried into captivity, and the city was burned. Many other cities were treated in the same way; and though at this period there were in Armenia 60,000 Greek troops, under the command of Camenas, who dwelt in Ani, yet they did not take a single step to repell the invaders, preferring to see the Armenians slaughtered.

On their side the Greeks never lost an opportunity of annoying these unfortunate people, whom they hated and oppressed. The Persians, however, in one of their inroads, arriving at those parts where the Greeks resided, war was declared between the two nations; the Greeks advanced against the Persians, and in the beginning they were successful, but at the end they were defeated and dispersed.

The Persians then ravaged the country as far as Kars, where Gagik Apas ruled as king. His principal city was taken and destroyed,

the inhabitants mostly massacred, and those who escaped with life were led into captivity. Gagik with a few fled to the citadel, and on the departure of the enemy came out and began to repair the city.

During all these troubles the inhabitants of the Fourth Armenia, remained in a state of tranquillity. But soon Monomachus, who desired to extirpate the Armenians, sent his General Perus Catapan, with a large force. He came and collected all the Armenian chiefs, some threatening, others by treachery, and brought them to the Emperor Monomachus, who without seeing them, banished them to an island, being determined to destroy the Armenian nobles. This also was desired by the Greek chiefs, who longed to possess the lands which belonged to the persecuted Armenians. Nevertheless when the Empress Theodora succeeded Monomachus on the throne, the exiled Armenians were permitted to return to their country.

Tughril, A. D. 1053, having heard of the death of Monomachus, again marched to Armenia, took first the city of Pergry, and then proceeded to the regions of Passen, destroying numbers of places, and reducing to slavery thousands of the inhabitants.

Gagik Apas hearing of this new invasion, and having finished the repairs of his city Kars, gathered his chiefs and collecting a

few troops, advanced boldly against the infidels, being assisted by his General Thathul. The Armenians, however, were defeated, and Thathul taken prisoner. The son of the Persian prince, Arsuran, being wounded during the fight, Tughril, who regarded this young man with much affection, on seeing him exclaimed: "If the youth who has been wounded, lives, thou shalt be spared; but if he die, thou shalt be sacrificed to his memory!„ At this Thathul replied: "If the wound has been inflicted by my hand, the youth will surely die.„ The young man died, and Tughril caused Thathul immediately to be put to death. His right arm was cut off and sent to the father of the youth with a letter, in which he said, that the hand which had killed his son, belonged to a brave man, and it would no more strike another blow.

Tughril marched to the city of Mánazguerd, in the province of Abahunies, and laid siege to it. One Basilius was the chief of the city, characterised for bravery and military skill. He was assisted in the defence of the city by a skilful Armenian priest, who by means of several artful inventions, rendered all the machines, which were used by the Persians against the walls, entirely useless. Tughril seeing this, gave orders to undermine the fortifications; but one of his soldiers to whom he had just before given cause of complaint,

shot an arrow into the city, to which was fastened a letter, containing the new designs of the Persian Monarch. A countermine was made by the citizens, and the Persian miners being taken, they were carried into the city and beheaded on the battlements.

Tughril enraged, caused to be brought from the city of Paghesh a large wooden balista, of which the bulk was so huge, that it required 400 men to drag it. When Basilius saw the machine raised against the walls of the city, he offered a large reward to the man who should succeed in burning it. There was a very ingenious Gaul in the city, who stimulated by the offer of the governor, composed an inflammable mixture, and mounting a swift horse, proceeded to the Persian camp, holding extended in one of his hands a letter. He went directly to the spot where the balista stood, and while the guards fancied him a messenger sent from the city to the king, he took the opportunity and broke the bottles of the combustible matter over the engine, which soon was destroyed by the fire. In the confusion that prevailed, the Gaul escaped back to the city.

Tughril, after this catastrophe which befell his huge engine, began to despair of capturing Manazguerd. Nevertheless he made a last effort to throw down the battlements of the walls, through other engines; but all was

ss. Besides the superintendent of his
ines was made prisoner by two Arme-
youths, and had his head cut off, which
ius caused to be thrown into the pre-
of Tughril. Hereupon the Persian king
l the siege and marched to the city of
gué, which after having plundered and
icred the inhabitants, he returned to
a.

menia, after this, enjoyed no repose; the
ians (Seldjuks), Persians and other na-
twice or thrice a year invading it,
destroyed all and massacred the defen-
inhabitants, plundering their pro-
s.

## Chapter XI.

### he capture of Ani by alphaslan

### A. D. 1062.

out the year 1062, Tughril died and was
eded on the throne of Persia by his
w Alphaslan. This monarch, in the
d year of his reign, at the head of a
force marched to the country of the
ans, with whom having made a treaty of
ce, proceeded to Kukark, where he
itted horrid devastations. Then he

marched to the province of Ararat in Armenia, and laid siege to Ani, which was governed for the Greeks by an Armenian named Pagarad, with the title of duke. Alphaslan having viewed the works, was a little daunted at their strength and extent; but finding a part of the wall in no very perfect state, he raised against it a powerful engine, by which a breach was made. But the breach being narrow, the citizens vaillantly defended it against the Persians, obliging them to retire. Hereupon Alphaslan raised the siege and began to move off.

In the midst of the assault Pagarad the governor fancying that the Persians had taken possession of the city, retired to the citadel. The citizens seeing that they were deserted by their governor, and thinking that the Persians were preparing for a second assault, raised most horrid outcries, and about 50,000 of them fled to the country by that side of the city opposite to where the Persians had encamped. Some of the Persians who had loitered there on their king's retreat, perceiving this, gave notice to Alphaslan, who countermanding the retreat of his troops, immediately returned to Ani. He entered the city, and gave orders to his men to slaughter all they found there. Human blood flowed in torrents, and so great was the carnage, that the streets were literally choked up with

ad bodies, and the waters of the river
churian became quite red from the quantity
bloody corpses that were thrown into it.
After the first fury of Alphaslan's cruelty
is a little abated, he gave orders to seize
e most wealthy of the citizens who had
t been killed, and torture them to make
em disclose where their treasures were
ncealed. Then he pillaged the churches
d murdered the priests whom he found
erein, some by drowning, others by flaying
ve and by other tortures.
The citadel having been deserted shortly
er the entrance of the Persians, they took
ssession of it. Alphaslan after having des-
yed all that attracted his notice, quitted
i leaving a Persian governor; a part of
e captives, amongst whom were several
iefs, were sent to Persia, and the others
t there to rebuild the city.
Alphaslan then marched to the country
Vanant, and sending a messenger to Kars,
where reigned Gagik Apas, directed him
come and pay him homage. Gagik being
formed of the approach of the messenger,
nceived a deceitful scheme to outwit him.
put on deep mourning, and caused ashes
be spread on the ground, upon which he
t, leaning on a black pillow. The mes-
nger on seeing him in this state, asked
m his affliction. "Alas!, replied Gagik,

since the death of my beloved friend Tughril, the uncle of Alphaslan, I have never ceased mourning for him, and the world now has nothing in it to delight me „. The messenger returned te his master, to whom he related what he heard; on which Alphaslan was so much affected, that he went to Kars in the greatest pomp, where having met Gagik, he embraced him, and bestowed upon him the most profuse marks of his esteem, fancying that he really honoured the memory of Tughril. And after honouring him with royal robes and acknowledging him king of Vanant, he returned to Persia. Gagik then reflecting that it was not safe to remain longer in Armenia, forthwith exchanged Vanant, with the Emperor, for three cities, Amasia, Comana, and the fortress of Zamindaw, in which he took up his residence.

## Chapter XII.

### The death of Gagik the exiled, by which the kingdom was entirely lost to the Pagradunians.

### A. D. 1077.

The Greeks increasing in their hostilities against the Armenians, assassinated them whenever they had an opportunity. Thus perished many of the chiefs, amongst whom Vassag, Governor of Antioch and brother of Gregory the Pontiff; and Vest Khatchadur, who resided in the castle of Andriana, was strangled by a Greek monk; but the murderer also was caught by the friends of the chief, and precipitated from the walls of the castle and dashed to pieces on the spot.

The exiled Gagik, horror-struck at these enormities, and annoyed by the blasphemies which the Greeks were in the continual habit of uttering against the Armenians, went to the regions of Cesarea, burning with hatred against the oppressors of his country. Marcus the metropolitan of Cesarea was one of the bitterest of the enemies of the Armenians, calling them contemptuously dogs whenever he had occasion to speak of them.

He had a huge dog which lived in his palace, and was named "Armen,,. Gagik having heard of this, took his measures, and with a few attendants, set out for metropolitan's palace. He was received by Marcus with great respect, and a feast was given the evening of his arrival. During the course of the entertainment Gagik desired to see the dog, and Marcus was obliged to introduce it before Gagik and to call it by the name of Armen. On Gagik enquiring why he was thus named, Marcus replied, "he is but a puppy, and on that account we call him Armen,,. Hereupon Gagik gave a sign, and his attendants seizing the dog put him in a large bag, which they had prepared. Then they bound the servants, and seizing the metropolitan put him in the same bag with the dog and fastened it. They proceeded then to beat the dog, which becoming furious, attacked the metropolitan and bit him until he died in consequence. They then plundered the palace and retreated to Cesarea.

The Greeks on hearing the horrible death of Marcus, became still more eager to annoy the Armenians; but their enmity was directed mostly against Gagik whom they sought to be revenged upon. Gagik in the mean time resided at Tarsus, and when he saw the Greeks less ardent in their search for him, he proceeded to annoy them again. Having

any adherents, numberless were the evils hich he brought upon the Greeks his emies. But at length he unfortunately fell to the hands of his enemies, in the folwing manner.

Having arrived with his people on the ains of Ardzias, near the fort of Kizistra, imprudently, accompanied by only three dividuals, one of whom was Rupen his lation, went to take repose in a garden ntiguous to this fort. The owners of the rt, three brothers, and the sons of a Greek the name of Mantaly, perceiving Gagik near them, laid fifty men in ambush, and en approaching him, saluted him by prosating themselves and kissing his feet. ey then brought him to the place where lay eir men in ambush, who, by a preconcerted gnal, suddenly coming out, seized him and ok him into the fort. Gagik's three comnions succeeded in effecting their escape. The Armenian chiefs on hearing this, llected their followers and laid siege to e fort; but it being impregnable, all their forts were unavailing. In the mean time e Greeks in the fort exercised the most rrid cruelties on the unhappy Gagik, rturing him by every method they could vise. At length they murdered him, and spended his body on the walls of the fort, presence of all the Armenians who had

flocked thither to besiege it. The sigl
their king's bloody corpse had a sen
effect upon them all, and they forthwitl
tired to their homes, convinced that notl
could be done against his murderers.
remains were afterwards interred by
Greeks without the fort, in order to ex
their greater contempt for his memory.
months after, however, an Armenian
the city of Ani, named Panig, conv
secretely his remains to a convent which
king had built in the city of Bizu. G
perished in the fifty-fifth year of his age
had been three years in quiet possessic
the throne of Armenia, and thirty-five y
in exile.

This unhappy king had two sons, Jol
nes and David, both of whom did not
survive their father. David, the youn
son, was poisoned by order of his fathe
law Abulkharib, who had suspected hi
treachery. Johannes, the eldest son,
married the daughter of the governor of
and still resided in that city, althougl
was in Georgia at the time of its captur
Alphaslan. He died some years after
death of his brother, being much grieve
the death of his own son Ashod, who
poisoned through envy of the favour
which he was regarded by the chi
Gantzag.

By the death of these princes the posterity
the Pagradunian kings of Armenia became
tinct.

On the death of Gagik the son of Apas,
id Adom and Abusahl, descendents of Sen-
acherib the Ardzrunian, their families also
came extinct. The Rupenian line next
ayed the sceptre of Armenia, of which we
all speak now.

# HISTORY OF ARMENIA

## THE RUPENIAN OR THE FOURTH ROYAL DYNASTY OF ARMENIA

### CHAPTER I.

### RUPEN THE FIRST.

### A. D. 1080.

We have said that on the capture of Gagik, the last king of Armenia, his companions effected their escape. One of these was Rupen, a relative of the king.

This prince afterwards retired to Cylicia, where by his warlike character and personal prowess, made many partisans amongst the Armenians who resided there. He had to endure many contests with the Greeks, in which being always successful, at last becoming more bold, attacked and took the fortress of Partzerpert. Then he assumed independent power over the Armenians residing in Cylicia, styling himself Rupen the first. He was much assisted in attaining this

object by an Armenian chief named Basilius, a man of courage and practised in all the wiles and stratagems of war, for which he was called "Basilius the Crafty,,.

Melikshah, having succeeded, A. D. 1086, his father Alphaslan on the throne of Persia, at the head of a powerful army marched to dispossess the Greeks of Armenia. He met with no opposition and conquered the whole of the country lying between Persia and the Mediterranean sea, into which throwing his weapon, exclaimed: "It is the sword of God with which he has given me to rule from sea to sea,,. He then appointed governors over the whole of the country and returned to Persia. Thus ceased the power and the influence of the Greeks over Armenia.

The Persian governors, however, began to torment the Armenians by laying upon them enormous taxes. Parsegh the Pontiff went to Melikshah and succeeded in obtaining from him a letter, in which the Persian monarch ordered them to desist from laying burthens on the people. Nevertheless on the death of Melikshah, A. D. 1092, the Armenians being again persecuted by the governors, many of them fled to Cylicia, where Rupen ruled. Shortly after the arrival of these fugitives, the prince Rupen died at the age of sixty, having ruled over the Armenians fifteen years.

## Chapter II.

### Constantine the first.

### A. D. 1095.

the death of Rupen, his son Constantine
eded him on the throne of Armenia. At
ɔmmencement of his reign he had some
sts with the Greeks, whom he defeated
ɔok from them several important places,
g which was the castle of Vahga,
ɜ he fixed the seat of his government.
was now that the Latins, in number of
)00 cavalry and 600,000 infantry, guided
ɔdfrey de Boulogne, arrived in Palestine.
laid siege to Antioch, where their
sions being exhausted, a famine broke
n their camp. Constantine, as well as
Armenian princes, on hearing this, sent
abundance of provisions. Upon which,
Latins from gratitude, after taking
ch, sent him valuable presents, created
narquis, and conferred on him an order
ighthood. After a reign of five years,
ɐ Constantine died. He left two sons,
ɔs or Theodoros, and Leo.

## Chapter III.

### Thoros the first.

On this prince succeeding to the thron showed a much more warlike disposi than his father. He had much to do ag the Greeks, whom he continually defe He took from them the city of Anazarb which he built a church, which was c St. Zoravark (Generals). He repaired n other churches, which had been perm to fall into decay in his territories, and tended his dominions to the borders o Mediterranean Sea.

The Greeks, perceiving the succe condition of the Armenians under the s of Thoros, became envious and their m nity against them raised to a high pitc

The Armenians, however, lived peace in Cylicia, until the year 1107, when Persians making an invasion there, plun ed many places and captured a numb prisoners. But being attacked at length Thoros, they were defeated and driven of his territories. They then proceede ravage the country, which was under government of Basilius the Crafty; but t were not more successful; for being attac

by Basilius, they were completely defeated and obliged to leave the plunder and the captives they had made.

Daphar, the king of Persia, hearing, A. D. 1108, of the destruction of his army by Basilius the Crafty, at the head of another large army, marched in person against the gallant Armenian. He first entered the province of Hasanmansur, and the season being autumn, he captured a great number of people who were occupied in gathering the harvest. He then proceeded against the castle of Harthan, to which he laid siege.

Basilius, on the other side, hastened to collect troops, whom dividing into four divisions, gave the direction of them to very gallant generals, and directed them to march at different quarters of the enemy's camp, and at a given signal to make a simultaneous attack. This being done, the Persians were taken by surprise; and after making a very faint resistance, and losing number of men, took to flight. The Persian general, while endeavouring to inspire his men with confidence, was met by Tigranes, one of the four leaders of the Armenians, and killed with a blow through his iron helmet. In this fight many Persians of distinction were made prisoners. The victors, having gathered an immense booty from the camp of the vanquished, returned to their respective abodes.

Two years after this event, Cylicia wa
vaded by numerous hordes of Scyth
Thoros, being assisted by two Armenian cl
Tigranes and Ablasath, marched with
brother Leo, at the head of all his tr
against the marauders. But in the first b
that ensued, the Armenians were defe
Thoros, however, ordering again his tr
led them against the enemy. In this se
encounter the two gallant chiefs, Tigr
and Ablasath, fell. Leo, the brother of Th
who at that time was near them, w
much affected by their death, that losin
command of himself, rushed furiously
the enemy, spreading every where destru
and terror. The Scythians, unable to
opposition to his impetuosity, precipit
fled, and thus victory crowned the exer
of Leo.

The Scythians quitting the territori
Thoros, advanced to the territory of E
pert, where they laid siege to the st
fortress of Zovk, then in the possessi
the great Armenian chief Abirad Pahlav
grandson of Gregorius Magistrus, and f
of Gregory and Nierses Shnorhali. T
however, were unable to capture the for
and at length were obliged to raise the s
and set forward to other expeditions.
Abirad exposing himself on the walls,
wounded by an arrow, and died. His

Basilius succeeded him in his possessions. A year after this, Basilius the Crafty died, and as he had not children, his government was exercised by the Gamsaragan chief, Degha Basilius.

Now hostilities having broken out, A. D. 1112, between Thoros and the three sons of Mantaly, the murderers of king Gagik, the Armenian Prince marched with his troops to Kizistra their castle, which was near his territories. Arriving there by night, he stationed his infantry in ambush; then in the course of the next day, as if despairing of taking the fort, retreated with his cavalry. The garrison fancying that Thoros would not return again, opened the gates, and were passing in and out as in perfect security, when suddenly the Armenian infantry came out and rushed to the gates, killing all they found there. Thoros hastened back with his cavalry, and entering the fort, they seized the three sons of Mantaly, and put the garrison to the sword. The three brothers being brought into the presence of Thoros, he demanded of them the sword and apparel of the unhappy Gagik. On their going to bring them, one of the three brothers anticipating the fate to which they were doomed, ran to the top of the castle, threw himself from the wall, and dashed out his brains by the fall. Thoros on hearing this, took a cudgel with which he

beat the second, saying, that such monsters did not deserve to perish by the sword. The third being less guilty in the murder of king Gagik, he was bound and sent to Cylicia. The fortress was plundered, a few troops placed in it, and then Thoros returned to his city Vahga.

After a reign of twenty-three years, Thoros the Prince of the Armenians, died, A. D. 1123, leaving no issue.

## Chapter IV.

### Leo the first.

### A. D. 1123.

After Thoros, Leo, his brother, succeeded in the government of the Armenians in Cylicia. Immediately after he collected his troops, and besieged and took the city of Mamestia. He then marched all over his territories, and advanced as far as Tarsus. At the news of the death of Thoros many marauders entered Cylicia, plundering and occupying several places. Leo expelled them from the country and recovered the lost places. The fame of Leo became so great, that he was an object of fear and dread to all the enemies of the Armenians, and the Greeks avoided all dispute with him.

Now, A. D. 1130, the Latin Count, Boemond who resided in Antioch, having heard of the known of Leo, sought to get him in his power. But not daring to encounter him in fight, he invited him to an entertainment, when he seized and confined him in a castle. After an imprisonment of two months, Leo obtained his release, by giving Boemond the cities of Mamestia and Adana, the castle called the rock of Sarwant and 60,000 pieces of money, besides leaving in his hands one of his sons as a hostage and guarantee against any hostile steps being taken for revenge.

Leo, however, after his release attacked and took all the places which had been exported from him, and in revenge annoyed the Latin chief whenever he found an opportunity. The Latins being much molested by him, called to their assistance Fulk the king of Jerusalem, and several bloody battles took place between the two parties. Leo being always successful against them, the Latins sought to make peace with him. By the mediation of the Count of Edessa Josslin, one of whose relations was Leo's wife, this was effected. The Latin chief restored the son of the Armenian Prince, and entered into engagement never more to molest him.

The Emperor Johannes Porphyrogenitus, A. D. 1137, having heard that Leo had captured

many Greek cities in Isauria, and wi
coming daily more powerful, declare
against him. He collected all the
forces, to which he added several tro
other nations, and thus marched to C
Leo perceiving the immense force tha
coming against and not having the assis
of his chiefs, who at that time were
riance with him, took his wife and hi
sons Rupen and Thoros, and retreated
a part of the mountains where the G
could not reach him. The Emperor he
this, sent after him a large detachme
soldiers to prevent him again attackin
Greeks in case he should succeed in obta
troops.

Then the Emperor proceeding int
country, captured Mamestia, Tarsus
Adana. He then detached a large bo
lay siege to Anazarba, a strongly for
city, built upon a hill. The inhabitants
of a warlike character, issued out o
gates, attacked the Greeks, and de
them. The Emperor then marched wi
his army and besieged it. For thirty-
consecutive days he was engaged ag
the city; but the citizens never fail
defend it with courage, burning the en
of the enemy. At last the Greeks succ
in making a breach, while they storme
a dreadful conflict ensued. The Arme

disputing every inch of ground with the most determined bravery, in which the women also took part, but were at last obliged to retire to the citadel. Here they were besieged by the Greeks, and finding that their capture was inevitable, they boldly marched out, and cutting their way through the besiegers, left the city.

Now the Emperor being in possession of the city, proceeded to besiege the castle of Vahga, which was cammanded at this time by a chief named Constantine of the Rupenian race, a man of great strength and experience in war. Notwithstanding the defence of this place, the Greeks took possession of it, and Constantine was made a prisoner and sent in fetters to Constantinople.

In the mean time the troops that were sent in pursuit of Leo, followed him into the mountains, and seizing all the passes completely blockaded him. This preventing a supply of food being furnished him, he was obliged at length to surrender himself into their hands, together with his wife and sons. They were bound and conducted to the Emperor, who sent them in chains to a place of secure confinement. He then drove all the Armenian troops from Cylicia and appointed Greek governors to rule the country, leaving a force of 12,000 men to protect them in their offices. This event occurred in the year

of our Lord 1137, and in the fifteenth of Leo's government.

The next year the Emperor feeling passion for the captive Armenian P released him, his wife and his sons, retained them near his person, giving apartments in the imperial palace.

Some time after, Leo's son, Rupen, g proof of incredible personal strength, by rying in his arms a large marble which four man could with difficulty r he was called, in presence of the Em "a new Sampson,,. Some envious indivi however. found means to raise suspicio the Emperor's mind against Rupen, which the Emperor directed his eyes put out, which occasioned his death. Sh after the Emperor entertaining u suspicions respecting Leo, caused him his son Thoros to be fettered and rems to their former prison. Leo died after a in prison, on which the Emperor con sionating Thoros, released him and kept near his person as before.

## Chapter V.

## Thoros the second.

### A. D. 1142.

Thoros resided in Constantinople until the death of the Emperor Johannes Porphyrogenitus, which happened a year after that of the unhappy Leo. When Manuel Comnenus succeeded to the throne, Thoros determined to withdraw to Cylicia. Shortly after he gathered all his property and secretely quitted Constantinople by sea and went to Antioch disguised as a merchant. From thence he passed to Cylicia, which he found in a dreadful state of confusion, in consequence of the inroads which the enemies of that country were making there. On his arriving in the mountains of Taurus, he disclosed to a priest his name and family. The priest took him into his house, and concealed him.

During this period, A. D. 1144, there were a great many Armenians who had taken refuge in the mountains of Taurus, from the persecutions of the Greeks. The priest assembled the Armenian chiefs in his house, and informed them that the son of Leo was

amongst them. They wished to see him, and joining with enthusiasm in his desire to drive the Greeks from Cylicia, soon procured him an army of 10,000 men. Thoros heading them, proceeded to expell the Greeks. He took the castles of Vahga and Amuda, and then marched against other places. Anazarba, Adana, Sis, Arewdz-pert, and Partzer-pert, were successively taken, and Thoros established himself on the throne of his ancestors. Shortly after this, Zanky, the chief of Aleppo, attacked and took Edessa from the hands of the Latins. Stephany and Meleh, two younger brothers of Thoros, during the time of his capture with his father and mother by the Greeks, lived in Edessa with their maternal relations; and now in the taking of the city, succeeded, during the confusion, to make their escape and came to Thoros, by whom they were appointed to offices of trust under him.

When the Emperor Comnenus heard of the success of Thoros, he raised a large army, and giving the command to his cousin Andronicus Cesar, directed him to march into Cylicia, and to extirpate all the Armenians.

Andronicus entered Cylicia sending word to Thoros, that he was ordered by the Emperor to bind him with chains, as was done before with his father. Thoros irritated, prepared his army to receive the invaders.

He placed the infantry in ambush at a certain pass, by which the Greeks would have to go, and then by a circuitous route placed his cavalry in their rear. The Greeks, on their arrival at the pass, where the Armenians lay in ambush, were suddenly attacked on all sides, and a dreadful slaughter ensued. A multitude were made prisoner, amongst whom were many Greek chiefs. Andronicus, however, with difficulty escaped and gave notice to the Emperor of the misfortune.

The Emperor much concerned respecting the number of Greek prisoners in the hands of Thoros, sent ambassadors to treat for their ransom; and that they might not be vilified in the eyes of the Armenians, gave to Thoros immense quantity of treasure. The Armenian Prince, on seeing the treasure, exclaimed with affected astonishment: "What! are my captives indeed worthy so much„! and immediately distributed the whole of the money to his troops. The ambassadors being astonished at this munificence, Thoros addressed them thus: "I reward my soldiers that they may again take your chiefs and favourites and bring them in fetters to me„.

The Emperor on hearing all these from his ambassadors, despaired of subduing Thoros, and by the mediation of the court of Antioch, made peace with him. A war, however, broke out again between them, in

which Thoros was successful, and captured again the Greek chiefs, for whom he again received ransom as before.

About the year 1146, the Scythians commenced making destructive inroads into Kharpert and Marash, continuing always to harass those countries. At length, in the year 1154, they extended their depradations to the Black Mountains and plains of Cylicia. Here, however, they were met by Thoros and driven out of the country.

Stephany, the Prince's brother, in the year 1156 rebelled and became independent. He, at the head of a body of bold determined troops, marched into Marash and subdued the whole country. On his return from this part, the Greeks, with whom he had before some contests, in which they were beaten by him, waylaid and caught him. They then put him to a most cruel death, tying his hands behind him, and throwing him alive into a cauldron of boiling water. He left two sons, named Rupen and Leo both of whom, in the course of time, reigned in Cylicia.

Thoros and Meleh hearing the horrible death of their brother, began to seek vengeance on his murderers the Greeks, destroying numbers of their towns and villages. They afterwards made a descent on the island of Cyprus where they caused extensive mischief, taking a vast number of captives,

itting off their ears and slitting their noses, nd in this maimed state sending them to onstantinople. The Emperor irritated at the ight of this mutilated multitude, sent a arge force against Thoros. The Armenian rince boldly met and entirely defeated hem. The Emperor then marched in person, t the head of a still larger force, into Cylicia, here after several encounters, which some- imes were decided in favour of the Ar- enians, and at other times of the Greeks, e became reconciled with Thoros, and hon- ured him with the title of Pansebastus. A ew years after this, Thoros died, having ossessed the government of the country wentyfour years. He left one son yet in his nfancy, whom he delivered in charge to his ather-in-law Thomas the Bail, a renowned hief and a native of Antioch. This individual aving received the boy, governed Cylicia or one year.

## Chapter VI.

### Meleh and Rupen the Second.

### A. D. 1168.

On the death of Thoros, Meleh his brother, who had revolted from him and lived in Aleq-

po, borrowed the cavalry of the chief of that city and proceeded to Cylicia. Thomas the Bail being in possession of the government, and the Armenian chiefs being unwilling to acknowledge Meleh's claims, he was obliged to return to Aleppo. Here he procured more troops and again set out for the conquest of Cylicia.

The Armenian chiefs finding that they were unable to oppose him, they at length consented to receive him as their sovereign, instead of the son of their last monarch. Thomas the Bail fearing for his life fled to Antioch, and the son of Thoros was murdered. But Meleh, being a man of detestable vices, his troops revolted and killed him after he had reigned five years.

His successor was Rupen the Second, A. D. 1174, son of Stephany and nephew of Thoros and Meleh. At the death of this late Prince he was residing with his brother Leo under the protection of Paguran an Armenian chief. Being of a mild character he became beloved by all his subjects. He married a Latin girl, from whom he had two daughters.

About the year 1182, a war broke out between the Greeks and Armenians, in consequence of which Rupen besieged and took Tarsus and Mamesdia which some time before had fallen into the hands of the Greeks. Hethum Sebastus, the brother of Nierses of

ımpron and son-in-law of Thoros the cond, who was appointed by the Greeks vernor of Lampron, seeing the successes of ıpen, began to hate him. At length Rupen's ger being excited, he marched with his my and laid siege to Lampron. Hethum plied for assistance to Boemond, the Latin ince of Antioch, who unable to meet Rupen enly in the field, invited him treacherously a certain place, where they might make treaty of alliance together. Rupen not specting his perfidious intentions, went, hen he was seized and put in confinement. Leo, his brother having heard of this, immediately pressed the siege of Lampron, and stressed the place so much, that Hethum as obliged to procure the liberation of the ince from Boemond, to prevent the destruc-on of himself and his city. Rupen was released and afterwards made peace with the vernor of Lampron.

Rupen the Second, after governing the rmenians with mildness and prudence for period of eleven years, gathered a public sembly of the chiefs and resigned the wer to his brother Leo in the year 1185. e then retired from the world, and became friar in the convent of Trazarg, where he ed a short time after.

## Chapter VII.

### Leo the second.

### A. D. 1185.

This prince being of remarkable wisdom and piety, greatly contributed to the happiness of his subjects. He extended the bounderies of his possessions beyond Mount Taurus, and took up his residence at the city of Tarsus, which he occasionally changed for the city of Sis.

The year after his accession, Cylicia was invaded by Rustam, Sultan of Iconium, at the head of a large army. Leo hastened to meet him, attacked and defeated the invaders. Rustam while again leading his men against Leo, suddenly expired in his tent, and his army being attacked just after, was routed with great slaughter, the victors gathering great spoil on their defeat. Leo some time after this conquered the country of Isauria, the province of Arasus, and captured the great fortress of Baghursa. He then invaded Syria and took the city of Adalia with some other places. From there he marched and laid siege to the city of Cesarea in Palestine, and pressing it hard, the governor made him im-

)resents to induce him to withdraw
ck. After this he captured seventy-
les in different parts of the country,
ı returned to Cylicia, where he com-
improving his kingdom.
ilt and endowed a number of hospitals
s-houses, repaired all the dilapidated
belonging to his government, and
·ebuilt the great city of Sis.
prince was the most famous and
of all the Rupenian line, whether he
rded in a civil or religious point of

g this period, Yussuf Salahaddin from
·aised himself to great celebrity. He
and conquered Egypt, and then
against the Latins in Palestine,
them and took the city of Jerusalem,
ar 1187; the Latins possessed it for
of eightyeight years. The Armenians
in this city obtained from this war-
means of immense gifts, the convent
mes.
ıews of the fall of Jerusalem having
Europe, the Latins, headed by the
: Frederick, proceeded to Palestine
ıquer it. On this occasion Pope
t the Third, wrote to prince Leo and
the Pontiff to lend assistance to their
n brethren.
Latins having arrived in Asia, A. D.

1190, took possession of Iconium, from which the Emperor Frederick wrote to Leo for assistance. Leo sent an abundance of provisions, because scarcity existed in the Latin camp, to that degree that many were induced to eat their horses.

The Emperor on seeing this returned thanks to the prince Leo, and promised to confer on him the supreme power of a king. Shortly after the Latins came to the frontiers of Cylicia, but unhappily the Emperor was drowned in crossing a river in Seleucia. The Latins proceeded to Jerusalem, but were unable to take it.

Now Leo observing the prosperity of his government, began to wish for a public coronation. To attain this object, he dispatched ambassadors to Pope Innocent the Third, and Henry the Sixth, son of Frederick Emperor of Germany, claiming the performance of the promise made him by the Emperor Frederick.

Henry readily agreed, and signified his desire to the Pope, that it should be done. Hereupon Innocent sent Conrad, Archbishop of Moguntia, to Cylicia with a magnificent crown, for the purpose of gratifying Leo. The Emperor at the same time sent the Armenian monarch a splendid standard, having in the middle a lion rampant, in allusion to his name. This device was henceforward borne

kings of Armenia instead of the one of the eagle, pigeon and dragon. ad arriving in Cylicia, proposed to l the Pontiff Gregory three conditions r acceptance, to which the Pope con- that all true Christians ought to l". To celebrate the festivals which cnowledged by all the followers of inity. 2". That divine service should be ied in the midst of the congregation, ) latter never to be kept outside the during the performance of the holy ɜ of the altar. 3". Not to break the fast ister eve. The observance of these ces would remove all causes of dis- ent existing between the Romish and ian church.

consenting to the conditions, twelve promised on oath to perform the ions, and an immense concourse of was assembled from all parts, in the Tarsus, consisting both of the clergy laity, chiefs, generals, bishops, priests, and soldiers, and there in their pres- eo was crowned solemnly by Gregory ntiff king of all the Armenians. This able event took place on the sixth of y, 1198.

news becoming generally known, liph of Bagdad sent ambassadors to tulate him on the occasion, and the

Greek Emperor Alexis sent him a splendid crown richly set with precious stones.

Thus Leo firmly seated on his throne; his kingdom being in profound tranquillity, he spent his time in improving it by the erection of many public institutions. While he was engaged in these labours, his queen died. He married again, some time after, to the daughter of Guido king of Cyprus, by whom he had a daughter named Zabel, who by some writers is called Elizabeth.

Kaykayuz the Sultan of Iconium, hearing the connection between Leo and the Latins, invaded Cylicia and captured the fortress of Pertuns, with the governor Gregory, whom he retained prisoner. He then laid siege to the castle of Gaban. Leo hastened, at the head of his troops, to give battle to him. The Armenians on approaching the enemy, rushed to the attack without waiting the orders of the king. The chief of Iconium having formed skilfully his order of battle, received their charge coolly; then dividing his army into four divisions, surrounded the Armenians and completely defeated them. A great number of them were slain, and many were made prisoners.

Leo, not dispiritated by this, gathered the scattered remains of his army, and with other reinforcements, with a view to cause a diversion proceeded to Lycaonia, where he

arned and destroyed villages and towns, nd carried the inhabitants into captivity.

The prince of Iconium hearing the de-ructions of his country, hastened to raise ne siege of Gaban, and returned to Lycaonia. e then made peace with Leo, each party storing what had been seized.

In the year 1202, the chief of Aleppo, son Nureddin, who bore great enmity against eo, at the head of a large army approached ie frontiers of Cylicia. He then sent mes-ngers to Leo asking him to be his tribu-ry, otherwise he would ravage the country ith fire and sword. Leo, by means of spies, aving been apprized of the approach of the essengers and of the nature of their mis-on, directed two of his chiefs to meet them nd to lead them astray so as to lengthen ieir journey. He then gathered his men and ith the greatest speed possible, marched wards the enemy. While the chief of Alep-awaited for his messengers, Leo and the rmenians arrived and attacked him. Taken ius by surprise, the enemy made a very int resistance, and in a few minutes took flight, leaving every thing behind them; ieir leader with great difficulty escaped. eo after plundering their camp, took with im their tents and standards, and returned ith his troops to his capital. He ordered, on ie banks of a river near it, to be pitched

the tents and standards he had taken, in the same form as they were in the camp of the enemy. When ordered the messengers to be brought to him. On their approach, observing their own tents and standards, they were struck with terror, and implored Leo for their lives. Leo generously released them, and sent them back to Aleppo with the same message from him to their chief as the latter had charged them to deliver to him.

Shortly after Leo went to visit his father-in-law in the island of Cyprus. During his absence Hethum the chief of Lampron and brother of Nierses of Lampron, broke out in rebellion. On his return Leo caught the rebel by a stratagem, put him in chains and confined him in the city of Sis. He then took possession of Lampron. Hethum, however, was released through the intercession of Gregory the Pontiff, but he lived in Sis, the king being unwilling to restore Lampron.

In the year 1207, a great quarrel took place between Leo and the Latins residing in his dominions; in consequence of which, he drove them all, clergy as well as laity, out of his dominions. He also made an incursion into the country about Tripoli and Antioch, and took a number of Latin chiefs whom he retained prisoners. The Pope and the Emperor of Germany wrote about this object, but he remained inflexible in his determination.

Now Leo found himself at his greatest prosperity; he was feared and respected from Cylicia to the Euphrates, from Lycaonia to the Fourth Armenia. He suddenly fell ill, and feeling his last hour approaching he sent for the Pontiff and the chiefs of the Armenians, and charged them, that as he had not other child but his daughter Zabel, then in her sixh year, on his decease they should permit her to succeed him on the throne. Then becoming worse, he died on the first of may 1219, after a glorious reign of thirty-four years; he was buried in Sis.

## Chapter VIII.

### Zabel and Hethum.

### A. D. 1219.

On the decease of her father, Zabel ascended the throne with the consent of all the nation. She exercised the administration of the government with the assistance of Constantine, a prince of the Rupenian race, who had some time before married the daughter of Hethum of Lampron.

Shortly after the accession of Zabel, the grandchild of Rupen, brother of Leo and son of Raymond of Antioch Rupen, having gather-

ed partizans, raised a rebellion and took possession of the city of Tarsus. Then he marched and laid siege to Mamestia; but Constantine hastily gathering the Armenian troops, met the rebels, attacked and routed them. They fled to Tarsus, but the city being soon reduced by Constantine, they were taken and put in confinement, where they died.

Constantine and the Armenian chiefs, with the consent of the Armenian Pontiff Constantine the First, married queen Zabel to Philip the son of the Prince of Antioch, who was an offspring of an Armenian mother and a Latin father. Philip was crowned king of Armenia, having sworn at his coronation, never to attempt to alter the religious ceremonies of the Armenians. For about two years Philip conducted himself very well, when his heart became estranged from the nation. He removed all the regalia, that had been in use with the Armenian princes, to Antioch, where he was preparing to follow them. The Armenians exasperated, seized and cofined him in the fortress of Partzer-pert, telling him, that until he had restored to the royal treasury in Sis all that he had sent to Antioch, he should remain there a prisoner. A year after Philip died in confinement.

At the death of Philip, Constantine wished

een Zabel to espouse his son Hethum; but e had determined to embrace a monastic e. Therefore she retired to the city of leucia where her Latin relations dwelt, and editated entering a convent of nuns which as in that city. Constantine continued to nd her messages urging her to marry his n; but she still refused. Upon which nstantine collected the Armenian troops id marched to Seleucia, with a view of forc- g the queen to the marriage. On his arrival Seleucia finding the gates of the city osed against him, he proceeded to lay siege it. Zabel, rather than subject her friends the horrors of a siege, consented to the arriage and accompanied Constantine to s, where she was united to his son ethum. Immediately after the marriage, ethum was crowned king of Armenia, in e year 1224.

Hethum with the assistance of his father, eatly embellished his dominions, by erect- g various works of public utility. The ieen also by her example produced a great form of manners in her subjects, she being mirror of every virtuous and amiable quality hich adorns her sex.

On the accession of Hethum to the throne, ere appeared in the east an extraordinary arrior of the race of the Scythians, a Tartar amed Jenghis Khan, who by the force of

his military genius conquered almost the whole of Asia.

This prince at the head of 700,000 men invaded Persia, and drove its king the Sultan Mahmud Kharezm Shah, into exile. On the death of Jenghis Khan, his son Ukhatha Khan succeeded to the throne of the Tartars; then the son of the exiled Mahmud, called Jalaladdin, having collected troops, invaded Armenia, and committed horrid devastations, first in the province of the Sunies, and then in that of Ararat, where he took possession of all the principal towns and cities.

The Georgians seeing the storm near them collected their troops, and under their Armenian general Ivané Athabeg, marched against the spoilers. But on their seeing the vast number of the enemy, they were much alarmed. Two Armenian chiefs, however, who had joined the Georgians with their men, encouraged them saying, that they would first attack the enemy, and when the Georgians should see confusion, they should hasten to their assistance.

These two gallant chiefs accordingly began the assault, but instead of being assisted by the Georgians, the latter took to flight. The enemy pursued and massacred a vast number of them. Jalaladdin then spread all his army over Armenia and Georgia, compelling all that fell into his hands, to deny their faith.

who refused were cruelly martyred. ddin at length tired of butchering ıny, gave orders to his followers to ıcise by force all whom they captured, ı destroy by fire every vestige of Christ-

aladdin then proceeding to the country ɜ Puznunians, committed all kinds of y. He then proceeding to Asia Minor, tated the whole of Iconium, taking ımense number of captives. He became midable, that every one feared a hostile rom him. But at length the chiefs of ɜnt countries in Asia Minor, observing utility of making peace with him, col- together their forces, and being assisted ethum with a body of 6000 hardy ɜ, made a furious attack upon the in- ɜ. A signal victory was gained by them, ılaladdin humiliated, retreated to recruit ɔrces; but while he was making pre- ions for another expedition, he was off by death.

## Chapter IX.

### Invasion of the Tartars into Armenia.

### A. D. 1233.

A little peace ensued in Armenia after the destruction of Jalaladdin's army. But shortly after the Tartars had an order from their monarch Ukhatha Khan, to invade it. The Tartars under the command of Charmaghan, first attacked the Aghuans, desolating their province. They took the city of Kantzasar and massacred all its inhabitants, except the children of both sexes, whom they carried into captivity. Winter coming on they retired to the plains of Mughan, where they lay encamped twenty months.

In the year 1237, divided into three parties, they again invaded Armenia, causing every where horrid devastations. Lory, in Upper Armenia, the strongly fortified castle of Gayan, fell into their hands, and the excesses that were committed there by the barbarians, obliged many Armenian chiefs to surrender themselves quietly to the Tartars; they were therefore, treated with less harshness.

Charmaghan then marched against the

ty of Ani, and sent a messenger to the izens requiring them to submit quietly d yield up the city. The citizens being willing to do so, and his messenger on his turn having been killed by the mob of the wn, Charmaghan highly irritated, laid ge to Ani, in the year 1239. After a short riod famine broke out within the walls, d many of the citizens in despair, rushed t and gave themselves up to the Tartars. hey were kindly received and a sufficient antity of food given to them. This induced any more to leave the city, until more an one half of the inhabitants were in the mp of the Tartars. But all at once the or wretches were divided into small parties, der the pretext of receiving better protec-on, when the Tartars fell upon them and assacred every individual. Then the city as easily taken, the remainder of the inhab-ants were massacred, and their habitations stroyed by fire.

The principal citizens of Gars hearing the pture of Ani, and fearing for their own fety, took the keys of their city and hasten-. to give them to Charmaghan. But it was o late; the Tartar saw that this was a easure of fear and not of love. Therefore he dered his men to massacre the inhabitants, cept the children and artisans, whom he pt captives. Then ed ced the city to

desolation, stationed a few wretches in the ruins, and returned to the plains of Mughan.

Ukhatha Khan, however, in consequence of the intercession of some individuals near him, wrote to Charmaghan to desist from harassing the Armenians, to deliver over their country to their chiefs, settling the tribute which it was necessary to pay, and then to march to other conquests. Thus the Armenians returned again to enjoy a little peace.

Charmaghan, the great general of the Tartars, died in the year 1242. Patchu succeeded him in the command, and immediately marched against Garin, which was under the authority of the great Sultan of Iconium named Khiathaddin; the city was taken and all its inhabitants put to the sword. Khiathaddin, who was at that time in Iconium, hearing the falling of Garin, gathered his troops and marched against the spoilers. Patchu advanced to meet him; Khiathaddin was beaten and with difficulty made his escape. The news of this misfortune reaching Iconium, Khiathaddin's mother, wife and daughter fled to Cylicia, where they were received by Hethum, and a residence appointed them.

In the following year, the cities of Cesarea, Sebastia, and Erzunga fell into the hands of the Tartars with many other places,

where many cruelties were committed by them. Khelath, Amid, Edessa and Nisibis had the same fate.

Hethum seeing the progress of the Tartars, and being sure that at length the invaders would approach him, endeavoured to avert the contemplated evil, by making proposals of alliance with them. Ambassadors were sent to Patchu with valuable gifts, proposing peace and promising to remain in subjection to the Tartars. The Tartar chiefs with Patchu consented to the desires of Hethum, but they required from him the delivery of the mother, wife, and daughter of the chief of Iconium who had taken refuge in Cylicia. Hethum was very unhappy at this demand, but fearing the Tartars, he was obliged to give up to them the females, after loading them with presents. Thus Hethum received on oath the assurance of their perpetual love and alliance.

While Hethum was engaged in these negotiations, A. D. 1245, Constantine the chief of Lampron, rebelled, and joining the chief of Iconium, who regarded the king with the bitterest enmity, commenced depredating Cylicia. Hethum hastened to attack the country of Constantine, and took all his possessions, except the fortress of Lampron, in which he had fortified himself. Constantine finding the king too strong to contend with,

wished to make peace; but Hethum distrusting his sincerity, refused to listen to him. Constantine then fled from Lampron, and went to the chief of Iconium; he succeeded in collecting troops with which he invaded Cylicia. But Hethum being continually victorious, Constantine was obliged to shut himself again in Lampron, where he was besieged and shortly after died.

In the year 1246, Ukhatha Khan, the great king of the Tartars, died and was succeeded by his son Kiuk Khan, with whom Hethum renewed the treaty of peace. He was of a most avaricious character, and therefore despatched collectors into all the countries that were under his subjection, for the purpose of draining them of treasure. Kharabugha, one of the collectors, was sent to Armenia, where he laid enormous taxes on the people, and on their not being able to pay them, he harassed them exceedingly. The chiefs remonstrated with him, but instead of becoming more moderate, he increased his exactions. At length he died of a cruel death, from dreadful ulcers which broke out in his neck.

In the year 1251, died Kiuk the great king of the Tartars, and was succeeded by his relation Mango, who was ever more avaricious than his predecessor. He immediately despatched Arghun the collector into

ıenia, with a band of cruel ruffians for purpose of placing upon the nation a itation tax. On his arrival Arghun de-ıded from each Armenian, from the age ten upwards, a sum of sixty pieces of ney. Those who were unable to pay this, e exposed to the most untolerable tortures. ose who possessed lands were deprived of ın, and their children and wives forcibly en and sold as slaves. If any of the tched Armenians were detected in an mpt to flee the country, they were strip-, severely scourged with green rods, and n torn in pieces by furious dogs trained the purpose.

When all of this tax was collected, hun ordered that henceforward a similar should be made yearly, not only upon ividuals but upon the produce of agricul-, corn and corn-fields, houses, bullocks, ses, etc. Nothing ever equalled the horrors t now overspread this unhappy land, most he inhabitants having no means of paying enormous tax, and no place to flee to protection from their oppressors.

Iethum having heard of the accession Mango Khan to the Tartar throne, and horrible exactions of his collectors in ıenia, contemplated visiting that mon-h in person in behalf of his distressed ntrymen. After two years his queen

Zabel had died, he left his old father Constantine with the government of Cylicia, and set out on his journey, in the year 1254. With some brave troops he passed through the country of the Aghuans, from whence proceeding to the Pass of Derbend, he arrived in the dominions of Mango Khan, by whom he was received with distinguished respect and attention. Hethum then disclosed the object of his journey, and Mango Khan promised to redress all the grievances of the Armenians. After fifty days, Hethum set out to return to his country, accompanied by a detachment of Tartars. The imposts of the Armenians were lessened, and the tyrannical collector Arghun recalled and put in prison. Hethum proceeded to Armenia where he met the chief Patchu in the province of Shirag. While he remained here, all the chiefs of the nation, together with the clergy, visited him and treated him with all the respect due to a king of their nation. After a year and four months of absence, Hethum arrived in Cylicia, at the seat of his government.

In the year 1255, the Sultan of Iconium having invaded Cylicia, Hethum drove him out of his country, and entering the possessions of that Sultan, captured the cities of Germanice, and Behesny with several other places. He then went to the assistance of his son-in-law, the Count of Tripoli, who was at

at time much distressed by his enemies.
captured the fortress of Muntas, and
oved of signal service in several instances
the Latins, especially to those of Antioch,
livering them from the power of their foes.
Some time after this Mango Khan appoint-
his brother Hulaou, king of Persia and
menia, with all the countries between the
ter and Greece. He set out at the head of
,000 cavalry to visit his new dominions.
his arrival at Bagdad he put an end to
government of the Caliphs and extended
power to the shores of the Mediterranean.
King Hethum and Constantine having
neld the actions of Hulaou, became alarmed
the safety of Cylicia. Therefore with the
nsent of all the chiefs, went to him with
luable presents, bringing with them the
ual tributes. They were kindly received,
d permitted to return in peace. Shortly
er Hulaou retired from these quarters,
ving governors over the cities and prov-
ces over which he had authority.
When the Egyptians heard of the depar-
e of Hulaou, they marched into Palestine,
otured the cities of Jerusalem and Aleppo,
ere they massacred a multitude of Christ-
ns. The governors left by Hulaou, fled to
licia, and after remaining there a short
ne, Hethum sent them in safety to Hulaou,
oviding them with the necessaries which

they required. By this act the Armenian king acquired a great popularity with the Tartars.

In the year 1265, the Sultan of the Egyptians, who in the Armenian records is called Pundukhdar, having heard that Hethum was in alliance with the Tartars through whose assistance he had captured a few cities which formerly belonged to the Egyptians, wrote to Hethum demanding the restitution of those cities. On the refusal of Hethum's to comply with his demand, he sent a large force to invade Cylicia; which being defenceless at that time, they committed horrid devastations. Hethum hastened to collect his troops, and dividing them into two divisions, placed them under the command of his sons Leo and Thoros and sent them against the invaders. He then set out to obtain aid from the Tartars, but before his return Cylicia was entirely conquered, his sons were defeated, Thoros killed, and Leo being betrayed into the hands of the enemy, was put in chains. He was at this time in the thirtieth year of his age. The victorious Egyptians spreading themselves over Cylicia, burned and destroyed every thing; the city of Adana was given to fire and innumerable prisoners taken. The castles and fortified towns, however, remained in the possession of the Armenians. The capital Sis was blockaded,

etrayed, taken and plundered of all its iches. Then the Egyptians collecting all the lunder they had made during their expedi- ion, together with their captives, amount- ng to 40,000 souls, returned to Egypt.

Leo was presented to Pundukhdar their ultan, who becoming attached to him, prom- ed to send him back to Cylicia. But the ultan, however, was dissuaded from his esign by his counsellors. He permitted Leo o go on a pilgrimage to Jerusalem and on is return, he put him in prison.

When Hethum returned to Cylicia and aw the devastations, and learned the fate of is two sons, he became disconsolate. He nt an ambassy to the Sultan of Egypt, ith magnificent presents, and implored him release Leo. The Sultan replied: "You are on iendly terms with the Tartars, who have ith them a captive named Sunghur, who is relation of mine; if you will procure his lib- ation, I will restore your son to your arms. ethum upon this obtained the liberation of unghur from the Tartars, and therefore is son was restored to him, to the great joy f all the people.

In the year 1269, king Hethum assembling l the chiefs and the Pontiff, in the city of arsus, abdicated the crown in favour of his n. Shortly after Hethum retired from the orld and became a monk, taking on that

occasion the name of Macar. A few months after he died, having governed the Armenians in Cylicia forty-five years.

## Chapter X.

### Leo the third.

### A. D. 1269.

At the death of his father, Leo became so unhappy, that for several months he was inconsolable, and falling ill through excess of grief, was at the point of death. On this occasion the Sultan of Egypt and the Khan of the Tartars, with many other chiefs, sent ambassadors to offer consolation to Leo, and exhort him to resume kingly the reins of the government of his kingdom.

Leo at length recovered from his sorrow, through the kind exhortations of his friends, and assembling the bishops and the chiefs, was anointed king of the Armenians. Then he began to study to improve the condition of his people; he increased the pay of the troops, and was so liberal in his donations to the poor, fixing regular allowances for them. He repaired all the places which had been destroyed by the incursions of the enemies, and particularly the city of Sis. He also did

the same with the fortifications and different castles and towns which had fallen into decay. He erected public schools in various places, and caused all the literary productions of the Armenians, from the earliest ages down to this period, to be recopied and to be distributed amongst the convents of the kingdom.

Leo was of the most amiable and mild character; in person he was beautiful, in acts of charity he exceeded all his predecessors, and during his reign not one of his subjects ever called upon him for assistance without being benefitted by his bounty. He was emulated in his kind attention to the wants of his subjects, by his pious and virtuous queen Anna, more generally known by the name of Kir-Ann, by whom he had seven sons and four daughters.

While Leo was engaged in forwarding the welfare of the Armenians under his sovereignty, an abominable plot was formed, A. D. 1272, by some of the chiefs among whom were a few of his relations, to dethrone him. The king, however, being informed of the plot, seized the conspirators one by one and deprived them of their forts. But soon after released them, leaving his vengeance to God. A few of these retired to Egypt and incited the Sultan Pundukhdar to break the covenant of peace he had formerly made with the

kings Hethum and Leo. Upon which Pundukhdar invaded Cylicia at the head of a large force, and Leo, being unprepared to oppose him, retired to a distant part of his kingdom and fortified himself against the enemy. The invaders then spread themselves over the country, destroying and massacring all that fell into their hands. The fortified cities and castles, however, escaped their devastations. They blockaded the city of Sis, but they were unable to capture it, and after losing many people, they raised the siege and marched against Tarsus, where they knew the royal treasures were kept. Having invested it with all their forces, at length they took it, and plundered it of all its riches. Taking a number of the inhabitants into captivity, they returned into Egypt. But soon Pundukhdar obtaining fresh supplies of troops, returned to Cylicia to recommence his devastations. Leo then reflecting that nothing was to be obtained by remaining concealed, issued from his place, collected troops, and exhorted them to fight bravely for their country and their God. Dividing them into six divisions, gave the one to the old general Sumpad, the others to people of his confidence, and ordered old Sumpad to march against the Egyptians, followed at some distance by the others. In the mean time the king with his division hastened by

ircuitous route to come upon the rear of invader's camp. The Egyptians seeing small number of Sumpad's division, and cying that they comprised the whole ɔe of the Armenians, boldly marched to ack them. While they were engaged, the er divisions arrived, and shortly after ) appeared in the rear of the enemy and ;an a furious assault. The Egyptians ıfused, gave way on all sides, and a dreadful ughter of them ensued. Their Sultan Pun-ɛhdar, with a few followers, succeeded in ːcting their escape. The Armenians after ːhering the spoil, returned to Tarsus, ompanied by a number of prisoners whom ːy had taken. Pundukhdar shortly after ıt ambassadors and made peace with Leo. The same year in which these events oc-red, the Sultan of Iconium made three ursions into Cylicia, but was each time eated and driven from the country with grace.

Some time after, A. D. 1276, the Iconians ıed with the Egyptians to wage war with ) Tartars; but Leo having proved to ndukhdar the unworthy character of his ɴ allies, the war was abandoned and the ef of Iconium treated with contempt. On s occasion Leo received the thanks of agha Khan of the Tartars, who invited n to pay him a visit in his residence; upon

which the king set out, and on his arrival there made a treaty of perpetual friendship and alliance with their prince. While he was there, the Iconians made an incursion into Cylicia and committed great devastations. On his return Leo collected his troops, and invading the country of Iconium, took full vengeance for the recent injury his country had suffered. Burning towns and villages, he captured numbers of captives and carried them into Cylicia. This expedition of Leo struck terror into all the adjacent nations with which he was on terms of enmity, and shortly after he received from all of them ambassadors proposing terms of peace and alliance, which were accepted. His chiefs also now began to look upon him with more than their usual respect, and Oshin, the son of Constantine of Lampron, having testified loyalty to the king, and regret for the rebellion of his father, was appointed governor of the castle of Asgura.

About the year 1278, when Cylicia was in perfect peace, the king suffered several domestic afflictions. His son Nierses, with his daughter Regina, fell ill and died, and soon they were followed to the grave by their mother Kir-Ann. The king, overwhelmed by these distresses, fell ill, and was for a long time confined by a dangerous malady. Not long after these events a plague broke out in the kingdom, sweeping off almost all

pulation, so that the fields being left
ivated, a famine ensued.
g Leo, after a reign of twenty years,
ole of which time was ardently devot-
the service of God, died, in the year

## Chapter XI.

### Hethum the second.

### A. D. 1289.

the death of Leo the Third, his son
n the Second, assumed the crown of
.. Hethum was a prince who despised
rldly pomp and grandeur, seldom ar-
himself in his regal ornaments, and
ting in his manners the lowliest dis-
n. His principal society was with the
of his capital, whom he daily engaged
yers and other religious occupations.
s particularly attached to the literary
tions of the Fathers of the Church,
s Bible was his constant companion.
l caused a copy of the latter work to
tten in clear and elegant characters,
sly for himself, and at the end of it
te some verses expressive of the high
ction and comfort he derived from its
at perusal.

In the year 1292, Melik Ashraf, the son of Kalavun Sultan of Egypt, at the head of a large army marched to the coasts of Palestine, at that time in possession of the Latins and Armenians. He captured the cities of Acre and Tripoli, and massacred all the Christian inhabitants. Then, in the following year, with new reinforcements he marched into the country bounded by the Euphrates, and laid siege to the strong city of Hromkla, then residence of the Armenian Pontiff. The governor was the uncle of Hethum and he made a brave defence for a long time. But at length it was taken by the Egyptians, who sacked it and butchered hundreds of the unfortunate inhabitants, carrying the remainder into captivity, among whom was Stephen the Pontiff. They plundered and then burnt all the churches, and took away with them the holy Hand of our Blessed Illuminator. Melik Ashraf was preparing then to invade Cylicia, when a messenger arrived bringing news to him, that during his absence, Egypt his country, was invaded and devastated by his enemies. He hastened to his country, accompanied by all his Christian captives, but on his arrival diseases broke out in the land, which almost depopulated it. Melik Ashraf was assassinated by one of his own servants, and was succeeded by a chief called Kitbugha. This chief seeing the mortality

s increasing, and fearing that the ance of the Almighty was upon his ry, sent back to the Armenians the Hand, and the church furniture the tians had seized, besides releasing all Christian captives. He wrote also a ly letter to Hethum, desiring to make ity of peace and friendship with him. m sent presents to the Egyptian chief, eturned to him a city which formerly een taken from his nation by the Arns.

## Chapter XII.

### Thoros the third.

### A. D. 1293.

hum, the king, harassed by the cares ernment, resolved to abdicate in favour brother Thoros. He convened an asy of all the chiefs of the nation, and ed the crown to his brother, after posg it four years. Hethum then retired to rent and assumed the name of Johand becoming a monk put on, for greater ty and bodily mortification, the dress with the Latin Franciscan Friars. This ed in the year 1293. The Armenians

still regarded him as their monarch, and Thoros continued to pay him submission.

Two years after an ambassador arrived in Cylicia from the king of Cyprus to Hethum and Thoros, to beg their sister Zablun in marriage for his brother Amaury, the Count of Tyre.

The royal brothers consenting, Amaury accordingly came to the city of Sis, where the marriage was celebrated. From this connection sprung Johan and Guido, who in the course of time reigned over Cylicia. About the same period the Emperor Andronicus sent two ambassadors to Hethum and his brother, to demand one of their sisters in marriage for his son Michael, whom he had associated with himself as joint Emperor. The two princes agreed, and thereupon Mary their sister, in her fifteenth year was sent to Constantinople, where the marriage was celebrated on the 16th. January 1296. Mary bore the prince Michael two sons and two daughters; Andronicus, who afterwards became emperor, Manuel, Ann and Theodora.

Shortly after this marriage, Thoros became tired of holding the government and besought Hethum again to resume the crown. The latter finding that Thoros was determined to relinquish the crown, reluctantly reascended the throne. Some of the chiefs having shown marks of enmity to Hethum, he seized

ıd punished them. He then paid a visit to hazan, Khan of the Tartars, with whom ) renewed the treaty of peace and alliance ɜtween the two nations. Hethum and Thoros ıen, being invited by the Empress Mary ıeir sister to pay her a visit to Constanti-)ple, they left the government of Cylicia . the hands of their brother Sumpad, then powerful warlike character, and proceeded ) Constantinople. Sumpad having ingratiat-l himself into the favour of the Armenian ıiefs, determined to seize on the crown. He duced his other three brothers and the Pon-ff Gregory, by whom he was anointed in the ty of Sis, king of the Armenians. Then ampad sought to confirm himself on the ırone. He paid a visit to Ghazan Khan, ıd persuaded that prince to acknowledge im, by a written document, sovereign of ylicia. The Khan gave him one of his lations in marriage. Sumpad returning to is, neglected nothing to ensure his contin-ance on the throne; he wrote, together ith the Pontiff Gregory, letters to the Pope Rome, wherein he made over himself and is dominions to the Romish power, to which e received kind replies.

On the return of Hethum and Thoros to ylicia, Sumpad took up arms and drove ıem out of the country, and upon their ıaking application to the Khan for assistance

against the usurper, Sumpad caused them to be seized in Cesarea and placed in confinement at Partzer-pert. A few days after Sumpad caused Thoros to be put to death and Hethum deprived of sight, in the year 1297.

Constantine, the brother of Sumpad, at these deeds was seized with horror, and making a party with some of the chiefs, collected a few bold and determined men, at the head of whom he marched to Sis to punish the usurper. Sumpad went out of the capital to meet him, and in the battle that ensued Constantine proved victorious; he made Sumpad prisoner and placed him in the same prison with Hethum. This latter being released from his prison, but blind, the reins of government were held for about two years by his deliverer and brother, Constantine; at the end of which period Hethum had miraculously his sight restored to him. All the nation rejoiced at this event, but Hethum did not wish to resume his crown, desiring to retire to a convent there to pass the remainder of his days. He was prevented, however, doing this by the Armenians, who forced him to take possession of the throne, which occurred in the year 1300.

Constantine having once tasted the delights of reigning, was discontented in relinquishing the power to his brother Hethum. Therefore he plotted to join his brother Sumpad against

e king. Hethum being made acquainted ith his intentions, caused him to be arrested, id they were both sent to the Emperor at nstantinople, by whom they were kept custody until their death.

In the year 1301, the Sultans of Damascus id Egypt invaded Cylicia; Hethum assisted r Tartar troops, attacked and drove them t of the kingdom. Then the Lycaonians id Egyptians marched against Hethum; but ey had the same success, and were obliged make peace. Then at the request of Hethum Tartar division, commanded by the neral Bilarghu, fixed his residence at azarba, for the protection of the country. thum having no issue, adopted Leo his phew, and caused him to be crowned ng of the Armenians in the city of Sis. s for himself he was thenceforward called e King's father.

## Chapter XIII.

### Leo the fourth and Oshin.

### A. D. 1305.

On the retirement of his uncle Hethum, o ascended the throne of Cylicia, in the ar of Grace, 1305. He was the son of the

murdered Thoros, and like his father possessed an excellent disposition, and extraordinary talents. In all important cases of state he invariably repaired for advice to the convent in which the late monarch Hethum had retired, where the latter guided him in the path which it was proper to pursue.

Some religious questions, however, arising among the clergy about the reformation of the church ceremonies, several councils were held on this subject. Dissensions arose amongst the people, and the king, together with his uncle Hethum, imprudently persisting in forcing the nation to conform to the regulations of the unpopular decisions, created enemies, who by their machinations wrought their destruction. Several of the chiefs, who differed with Leo and Hethum in these matters of religion, repaired to Bilarghu, the Tartar general, who commanded the Tartar division in Anazarba, and inspired him with the same enmity to the king and his uncle as they themselves entertained. Bilarghu hereupon invited Leo and Hethum to visit him in order to confer upon some affair. The king and Hethum not suspecting treachery, proceeded to Anazarba accompanied by Oshin the general and forty other chiefs of the nation. They were received by Bilarghu with much affected respect, when seizing his opportunity, the Tartar caused

n all to be mercilessly butchered. This pened in the third year of Leo's reign. murderer Bilarghu then assumed regal er. On the news of this massacre reaching in, the youngest brother of Hethum, he struck with horror, and instantly setting for the capital Sis, he collected the aining of the chiefs, and procuring ps, marched against the Tartars and e them out of the kingdom. Mourning overspread the nation on account of loss of the king, his uncle and so many he chiefs.

shin succeeded to the crown in the year 8, and after setting the state affairs, rned to the old point of religious reforms; in discord and dissension overspread the l.

n the year 1317, died Ann the consort of in, leaving one son named Leo. The king rtly after married Johanna a Latin, and he royal family of Sicily. Being thus con-ted, Oshin demanded, by the desire of the e, assistance from the kings of the West inst their enemies, which was promised them.

While Oshin was expecting the arrival of ps from his European allies, Cylicia was aded by Sultan Nasr, chief of Egypt, at head of 18,000 men. Oshin at first in-ed to retreat before the enemy, but at

length confiding in God, collected about 200 men, all bold and hardy, and attacked the Egyptians by surprise in their camp. Success followed this daring enterprise, and the enemies were defeated and fled, leaving on the field 6000 men, and a number of prisoners with many chiefs.

The year after, A. D. 1320, the king fell dangerously ill, and feeling his last hour draw nigh, called to him several of the most faithful chiefs, among whom was Oshin of Gorigos, and delivered to their charge and protection his queen Johanna, and his son Leo, then about twelve years, directing that on the latter attaining the age of puberty he should ascend the throne, should they think him capable of governing the nation. He then appointed Oshin Bail regent, and shortly after died in the thirteenth year of his reign.

Just about this time a violent earthquake shook Armenia, swallowing up a number of villages in the provinces of Ararat and Sunies. The great city of Ani was also destroyed, and the inhabitants dispersed into various parts. Some took up their residence in Vasburagan, others settled in Persia; a great number went to Tartary and resided near Astracan, whence part of them removed to Crimea in the year 1331, where they built a number of houses and churches; the re-

er went to Europe and settled in Poland, chia, and other places, where their ıy exist to this day. Ani was never ard rebuilt.

## Chapter XIV.

### Leo the fifth.

### A. D. 1320.

the Fifth succeeded his father as king of menians at the age of twelve years. Bail the regent married the young king laughter, and being a widower himself, oused the queen dowager Johanna. then assumed the titles of father of ng and Lord of Cylicia and Isauria. rmenian general Hethum dying, the appointed to that high office, his own r Constantine. In consequence of this favour of Oshin, some of the Latin ns of queen Johanna provoked the ıian chiefs to conspire against him, l by Zablun the sister of the deceased )shin, and widow of Amaury Count of by whom she had three sons, Henry, nes, and Guido.

discovering this, Oshin Bail, at the of a large army invaded Tyre, and

capturing Zablun and her eldest son Henry, brought them to Sis where they died in prison. The other two sons of the princess fled to Cyprus, near their uncle the king of the island.

In the year 1321, Nasr the chief of Egypt, hearing of the unpopular character of the regent, sent an army to Cylicia for the purpose of plundering it. A detachment was sent to lay siege to the city of Payas on the sea coast. Constantine, the Armenian general, at the head of 600 men attacked and routed this body, and then advancing against the other divisions of the Egyptians, defeated and drove them out of the country.

The Egyptians, however, getting reinforcements, marched again to Cylicia, and besieged the city of Payas. Invested by sea and land it at length surrendered; the infidels destroyed the whole of its fortifications, and massacred a number of the inhabitants. Then spread themselves over Cylicia, and having devastated it, gathered the spoil and returned to Egypt.

The Armenians applied again to the Latins for assistance; but as at the first time, now also had nothing but promises. Nasr the chief of Egypt, being acquainted with the expectations of the Armenians, prepared a large army to oppose the expected force. But at length perceiving that none was

kely to appear, he determined to march to ylicia and extirpate the inhabitans. He ssociated with him a great chief named mir Omar, who had many Turkish troops nder his command. He prevailed also with he great Tartar general Temurdash, to in the enterprise. Thus then was a formidble coalition formed against the young onarch Leo and his regent Oshin, composed f Egyptians, Turks and Tartars.

Temurdash commenced first the hostilities, narching into Cylicia at the head of 30,000 nen. The country was taken by surprise, nd the Tartars began their devastations vithout the least opposition being made to hem. Villages and towns were destroyed, he inhabitants were killed, and the tombs vere opened in hopes of discovering treasure. The corn in the fields was burnt and the attle wherever found, were carried away. For twenty-five days they continued pillaging and despoiling, at the end of which eriod they left the country with the booty hey had obtained.

Then to the Tartars succeeded the Egyptians with their allies the Turks, who marching into the heart of the country committed nheard-of excesses and cruelties. Many of he fortified cities, amongst which Adana, were taken and destroyed. Wherever they ame, death and destruction followed: and

well has it been said, that the record of their invasion forms the bloodiest page in the history of the Armenians. Having spread mourning and desolation over the land, they returned to Egypt, carrying with them about 20,000 souls into captivity. During these calamitous events the Armenian chiefs, instead of joining to resist the invaders, were fighting and quarelling with each other.

In this state of distress king Leo and the Pontiff Constantine wrote to Pope Johannes, informing him of the ruined state of the country and imploring aid. The Pope returning them kind replies, exhorted them to patience, and sent them money to commence repairing their towns and villages, and raising troops to oppose the invaders. The Pope wrote also to the Christian nations, but his applications were treated with neglect.

The Armenians then applied for assistance to Abusaid, Khan of the Tartars, who generously sent them 20,000 troops to protect their country, and wrote to Leo to assure him of his friendship and alliance. He also sent ambassadors to the chief of Egypt to endeavour to make peace between him and the Armenians.

Before the Tartar troops had arrived, a horde of plunderers, composed of different nations, invaded that unfortunate country from Asia Minor. The great city of Eyas, was

plundered and burnt; they took its castle near the port, and dismantled it, but on their extending their depradations, the Armenians, urged by despair, took up arms and attacked them. Vain however was their attempt, before the great number of the spoilers. The Armenians after leaving half their force dead on the field, were defeated and numbers of them taken prisoners. The enemy then took Melun and set fire to it, causing a great number of the inhabitants to be burnt and the remainder carried into captivity.

In the year 1323, however, through the mediation of the Pontiff Constantine the Third, a treaty of peace was signed between king Leo and the prince of Egypt. The Tartar auxiliaries having also arrived, the Armenians took heart and began to repair their country.

About the year 1330, enmity broke out between Leo and his father-in-law Oshin Bail; upon which the former sent troops to Adana and seizing Oshin and his brother Constantine the general, put them to death. He then sent the head of his father-in-law to the chief of Egypt, and the head of Constantine to the Khan of the Tartars. Leo then sent to Cyprus for his cousin Johannes, son of Zablun, and appointed him Bail, that is chief of chiefs, and General of the Armenians he nominated a Latin of the name of

Baldwin. The king more fully developing his unruly passions, killed his queen, and then married a Latin, daughter of the king of Sicily.

Some time after, A. D. 1334, a report was circulated that the Latins were making preparations to march to deliver the Holy Land from the hands of the infidels. The chiefs of Egypt and Aleppo were much alarmed, and thinking that the Armenians were the cause of their enemies arming, and would in the event of their coming render them assistance, determined to destroy the whole of them. Nasr, however, had formerly made a solemn treaty with Leo to abstain from hostilities fifteen years; being therefore unable to march in person against Cylicia, but alarmed at the report of the approach of the Latins, collected his troops and placed them under the command of the chief of Aleppo, who was at that time the avowed enemy of king Leo.

The chief of Aleppo marched into Cylicia, and taking the Armenians by surprise, ravaged the country from one end to the other, burning towns and villages, and killing all the people they found. Having gathered booty and prisoners, he returned to Egypt and Arabia. During this hostile visit Leo fled with his chiefs, and fortified himself in impregnable places.

In the year 1337, the Egyptians again nvaded Cylicia. Leo having no means of esistance, shut himself up in a castle, from which he sent ambassadors to Melik Nasr mploring a reconciliation. The latter replied: 'I will never make peace with you, until you promise on oath, not to hold any correspondence or communication with the western nations,,.

Leo forced by distress and the miseries which he saw his subjects daily suffer, swore on the Evangelists the oath required, in presence of the Egyptian ambassadors. The enemy then left Cylicia, and the country again tasted the sweets of tranquillity.

Notwithstanding this oath, Leo after two years again began his correspondence with the Pope and the other western powers. Melik Nasr, coming to the knowledge of it, immediately despatched to Cylicia a body of 16,000 cavalry, to ravage the country; which they did and returned again to Egypt with great booty and numbers of captives. Henceforward Leo to prevent a recurrence of hostilities from the same quarter, never made open communications to the Pope, yet through the medium of the Latins in Cylicia he secretly informed him of his distress and supplicated him for assistance.

On this account a disagreement took place between *the chiefs* and bishops and the king

and the Pontiff, one half of them insisting upon the total discontinuance of communication with the western nations, declaring that through them they were reduced to almost utter ruin, the remainder opposing. This dispute at last grew so violent between the Pontiff and the king, that the former rebuked the latter, and threatened him with the vengeance of the Church. Leo was so incensed at this, that he caused him to be deposed from the pontificate, after having held it fourteen years.

After a reign of twenty-one years, Leo the king, died, in the year 1342.

## Chapter XV.

### Johannes or Constantine the Third, Guido, and Constantine the Fourth.

### A. D. 1342.

Leo having no issue, his cousin Johannes Bail, surnamed Juan, the nephew of the king of Cyprus, and the son of the princess Zablun, was elected and anointed king of the Armenians, under the title of Constantine the Third. This prince was an ignorant and unprincipled character, utterly careless of the welfare of his subjects, and continually

embroiling himself with the chiefs of the nation. He altered the royal palace in Sis to a most ridiculous and inelegant form, and despising all laws of decency and order, indulged in the most disgraceful pleasures. Having issued an order, under severe penalties, for the whole of the Armenians to conform to the ceremonies of the Romish church, it produced such a tumult in the nation, that the troops rose in mutiny and killed him after a short and disgraceful reign of one year.

At his death the Armenian chiefs unanimously called his brother Guido, surnamed Sir-Gui to the throne. He was at this period governor of Achaia, but upon his being acquainted with the choice of the nation, he immediately proceeded to Sis, where he was anointed king, in the year 1343. When the news of these changes reached the Egyptians, they were aware of the weakness of the nation, and forthwith invaded Cylicia in large numbers. Guido having no means to oppose, retired to a fortified castle. The Egyptians having plundered every valuable thing, they returned to their country.

The next year again they invaded Cylicia, and had the same success. At this period Cylicia was in a lamentable state of disunion; the chiefs divided into factions and engaged in *the prosecution* of private feuds, lent no

aid whatever to the king whom they abhorred. Guido had rendered himself very unpopular by the measures he adopted on his accession. He seized all opportunity of displacing the Armenians from offices of trust, which he gave to his Latin relations, and at this period most of the cities and castles of the kingdom, were commanded by these strangers. At length Guido pushed the patience of the nation to a last trial, and began to force the Armenians to conform to the Latin religious ceremonies.

A considerable tumult was the consequence of this measure, and some of the independent and spirited chiefs wrote to Guido, exhorting him to look to the affairs of state and not meddle with religion, bringing also to his recollection that by the same measures his brother was deprived of his crown and life. The king remaining inflexible, a conspiracy was formed against him, which cut him off in the second year of his reign, in the year 1344.

On the death of Guido, Constantine the Fourth, son of Baldwin the Armenian general and grand-son of a Latin, was raised by the Armenians to the throne of Cylicia. This prince acted with prudence and honour, and endeavoured to restore peace and union amongst his subjects. Shortly after his accession, he had occasion to make some com-

munications with the Pope and western nations; which coming to the knowledge of the Egyptian chief, he collected a large army consisting of Egyptians, Syrians and Mesopotamians, and determined to extirpate the Armenians, conceiving that if he could effect this, the western nations would no more think of the East.

Constantine being acquainted with the preparations of the Egyptians, gathered a few brave troops, appointed a powerful Armenian chief his general, and proceeded to meet the infidels. At the incitement of the Pope, Hugues, king of Cyprus, and Deodatus, a Commander of cavalry from the island of Rhodes, brought troops to the assistance of the Armenians. The conjoined Christian forces thus prepared, advanced to meet the invaders, who after a severe contest were routed and driven out of Cylicia. A vast number fell on each side.

The country now became in some degree reanimated, and contentment again appeared amongst the inhabitants. Many communications passed between the king and the Pope, to whom Jacob of Sis was sent on a mission. This messenger speacking personally to his Holiness, convinced him rather than those who had attacked the Armenians by calumnies.

*In the year 1360*, Constantine the king

died, after a reign of eighteen years. An interregnum of two years ensued, occasioned by the dislike of the chiefs to nominate a successor to Constantine from amongst his family, and they were afraid to elect one of their own body. Thus the country was in a state of anarchy, and the enemies, taking advantage of its defenceless state, ravaged it with the most perfect impunity.

## Chapter XVI.

### Leo the Sixth, last king of the Armenians.

### A. D. 1365.

When the news of the late king's death, and the deplorable state of Cylicia reached the Pope, he wrote to the Armenian chiefs, exhorting them to join with each other and appoint a head to the nation. At the same time he advised them saying, that their choice could not fall on a worthier object than Leo Lusinian, who was connected both with the Armenians and Latins, being of the family of king Guido, and a relation of Peter king of Cyprus. Then the Armenian chiefs and bishops, according to the advise of Pope Urban the Fifth, raised Leo to the throne

under the title of Leo the Sixth. He was solemnly anointed in the Cathedral of Sis, king of the Armenians.

Leo had some time before married a Latin named Mary, belonging to the family of Lewis Charles king of Hungary. This prince was of a naturally good disposition, and proved a much better monarch than many of his predecessors. He perhaps would have been one of the most glorious of the Armenian kings had he lived at any other period of their history. But alas! Cylicia was now in her last stage of decrepitude. The chiefs forgetting the exploits of their forefathers, and the glory of their nation, only sought to obtain a petty and temporary superiority over each other; by such conduct the whole country was embroiled with feuds. The lower orders, used merely as tools in the hands of the powerful, seeing the unworthy passions which animated the bosoms of their superiors, lost that affection and respect for them which are absolutely necessary for the preservation of order in a state such as Cylicia, where only the king and the nobles possessed the power. In such a degenerated state it only required a slight convulsion to shake the government to pieces.

In the year 1371, the Egyptians again invaded Cylicia, ravaging it with the same *ferocity as before*, burning towns and cities,

and destroying all the products of the lands. Hereupon a dreadful famine ensued, and some idea may be formed of its extent, when it is related that a bushel of corn was sold in the city of Sis at the enormous sum of 500 pieces of silver.

Leo, the king, attempted to arrest the progress of the invaders, but was defeated and severely wounded, on which he fled for safety into the mountains. Here he remained for a considerable time and no accounts being received of him, the general belief was that he had fallen in the field. The Armenians, after some time employed in useless search after Leo, determined to appoint Otho, the duke of Brunswick and a descendant of the royal family of Saxony, king, and to make him espouse Mary the queen. While preparations were making for these nuptials, Leo appeared, to the great joy of the queen and the nation.

In the year 1374, a revolution broke out in Egypt; the Sultan was deposed and his cousin Ashref Shaban usurped the throne; he was an inveterate enemy of the Christians. Ashref on hearing of the wretched condition of Cylicia, and being aware of the connection between its king Leo and the Pope, sent a large army to invade the country. The Egyptians were so vast in number, that the Armenians abandoned their arms and dispers-

through absolute fear; 30,000 of the
pulation took refuge in other countries
om the fury of the infidels. Their cruel
vaders, having spread themselves all over
e country, committed the most horrid
vastations, putting all the inhabitants, who
ll into their hands, to the sword, and total-
demolishing all the convents, churches,
id other buildings which they captured.
he city of Sis after standing a siege of two
onths, was taken by the Egyptians and
cked. They broke open the tombs of the
menian princes and burnt the relics they
ntained. Then despatching parties of troops
all parts, they destroyed by fire every
ilding that a human being could inhabit,
id rendered the country a complete desert,
termined, as they declared, that the name
Cylicia should be erased from the list of
ngdoms in Asia. The Egyptians then com-
enced torturing their captives to make them
ny their religion, and on their remaining
m to their faith, they were put to death
various cruel ways; some by being flayed,
hers by being sawed asunder, and a vast
mber by means, the relation of which would
an outrage to decency. The priests were
inded by red hot irons thrust into their
es. The bishops had their tongues cut out
id their fingers disjointed and bruised.
hese were permitted to live as a monument

of the vengeance of the infidels, who had with fiendish ingenuity incapacitated them entirely from ever pursuing their vocation.

At the commencement of these horrors, Leo despairing of affording assistance to his subjects, consulted the safety of himself and his family, and taking Mary his queen, Phinna his daughter, and Shahan the chief of Gorigos his son-in-law, shut himself up in the strong fortress of Gaban, where he was afterward joined by a few chiefs. Here he was blockaded by the Egyptians for nine months, at the end of which time the provisions of the fort were entirely exhausted. Leo then by the advice of his followers sent proposals to the general of the Egyptians, wherein he offered to surrender, provided the lives of the garrison were spared.

The general promised this on oath, whereupon the king came out of the fortress and gave himself up. He was immediately fettered, and Gaban plundered. Here the captors found an immense booty, all the royal treasures having been removed thither at the beginning of the invasion. The Egyptians then departed and carried the whole of the royal family in chains to Cairo. Many people enterposed with the Sultan on their behalf, entreating him to spare their lives. "If, said *the* Sultan, they will renounce christianity, *I will* immediately set them at liberty."

The same offer was subsequently made them by his son and successor, Sultan Melik Mansur. They, however, refused and remained in prison seven years. This capture of Leo occurred in the year 1375, in the eleventh year of his reign, from which period we date the extinction of royalty amongst the Armenians. For to such a state of desolation had the Egyptians reduced Cylicia, that the most sanguine could not entertain the slightest hope of again seeing it reestablished as the kingdom of the Armenians. That unfortunate country remained for a considerable time in the hands of the Egyptians, from whom it passed to the Ottomans.

After the royal family of Armenia had been in captivity five years, Shahan, by the mediation of some friends, obtained his release A. D. 1380, on which event Leo sent him with letters to the Pope of Rome and Juan king of Spain, imploring assistance from them to release him and the remainder of his family from confinement. While the king of Spain was consulting with regard to means for rescuing the unfortunate king of Armenia from prison, the Sultan Melik Mansur died, and was succeeded on the throne by his brother Melik Salih, a child six years of age. Juan then sent ambassadors to Egypt with valuable presents, praying

the infant monarch and his guardians to release the royal family of Armenia from prison, pledging himself that henceforward no molestation should be offered by them to the Egyptians. The Spanish embassy met with success in their mission, and Leo and his family were released, and the ambassadors furnished with letters to king Juan. This occurred in the year 1382.

Immediately after his release Leo, with his family, proceeded to Jerusalem to offer up his thanks at the Holy Sepulchre. Here he left his queen and daughter agreeably to their wishes, and then went to Rome, where he was kindly received by the Pope Urbanus the Sixth. From Rome Leo went to Spain, where king Juan gave him a very honourable reception, and bestowed upon him houses and lands.

At this period a bloody war broke out between France and Great Britain. The Pope undertook the office of mediator between these great rival powers, and on this occasion selected Leo, the last Armenian king, to accompany his legates in several embassies to London and Paris, having, as he declared, the highest opinion of the qualities of the head and heart of this unfortunate prince. Leo was particularly pleased with this mark of the favour of His Holiness, as it opened to him a new field in which he could exercise

iis talents for the good of his native country. Ie hoped to be able to acquire supporters in he monarchs of these countries in his pro-ected attempt to replace himself on the hrone of Armenia. But after repeated in-erviews with the kings of England and 'rance, he found that neither power had ny inclination to profit by the Pope's pacif-c proposals. He was also disappointed in iis hopes of assistance from them in the learer interests of Armenia, as they declined loing any thing for him, otherwise than by vishing him success.

. Some time after, having visited France, eo died at Paris on the twentyninth of no-ember, 1393, in the sixtieth year of his age, nd the eleventh of his liberation from Egypt. lis remains were interred in the church of he convent of the Celestines, and a magnif-ent tomb erected over them. His queen Mary ied, as it is supposed, at Jerusalem, and was uickly followed to the grave by her dauhgter 'hinna.

Thus perished the royal power of Arme-iia. From this period the Armenians were ondemned to live under the heavy yoke f their foreign masters. These, incapable f any *great* idea, and careless of any

monumental work, by which a nation marks its own temporary passage in the history of mankind, only used their power to destroy all that was left of the past grandeur of Armenia.

The miserable and defenceless inhabitants, being continually persecuted for their religion, and harassed with heavy taxes, which, as they were unable to pay, they were sold into slavery; being also in despair as to the future, they preferred to leave their homes, their property, their country, and to wend their way towards foreign lands in search of that hospitality, which was refused them under the losed sky of their loved country.

Thus was diminuished the number of the aboriginal inhabitants of Armenia. Fereigners, or rather hordes of barbarians, as there were the Keurds, rushed to inhabit the country abandoned by the expatriated Armenians. They principally resided in the country of the Mogs, in Vasburagan, Duruperan, Paghesh, Sasun, Peznunik, Daron, in the country of the Aghtznies near Mesopotamia.

All these districts or provinces had distinct governments, and in the course of time their population became numerous, swelled by hordes of Tartars and Turks who occasionally came and settled there, mingling with the Keurds, and forming one nation

h them. They were afterwards conquered Tamerlan. All these people were hostile the remainder of the aboriginal inhabıts, whom they continually annoyed and arded rather as foreigners than as the ıtful owners of the country.

D OF THE HISTORY OF THE RUPENIANS

# ISTORY OF ARMENIA

## EVENTS OF LATTER TIMES

### CHAPTER I.

### ECORD OF EVENTS THAT OCCURRED IN MENIA AFTER THE DECLINE OF THE ROYAL POWER.

m the close of the regal dynasty in
ı up to the present day, the history of
ıia is simply an account of its relig-
ıe pontifical power only being left to
rmenians intact. Nevertheless since
; this period there occurred several
in Armenia, which caused some poli-
hanges, we do well to mention a few
m in order to complete our historical
ı.

It was about the year 1378, that the great conqueror Tamerlan flourished. This individual at first reigned in the city of Samarcand, in the year 1366. Twelve years latter set out to effect the conquest of Persia, which having subjugated, he overran the country of Aderbeyjan and captured the city of Tabriez. Here having collected an army of 700,000 men, he brought several other places into subjugation and then invaded Syria, and in 1386 captured Bagdad, from whence he proceeded to Vasburagan. After committing many ravages, he marched to the country of Sunies, where he took the fort of Erunjak, and massacred all its inhabitants. Thence he marched to other places of Armenia, and having captured many cities he spread desolation every where, cruelly massacring all who fell into his hands.

In the year 1389, Tamerlan invaded the provinces of Duruperan and Daron, where his troops being engaged in destroying the towns and villages, an Armenian woman gave an instance of virtue and heroism. She was a native of the province of Mush; seeing that the Tartars had taken the village in which she lived, she seized a sword, and taking her beautiful child, of about eight years of age, she took refuge in some place, where she hoped to be safe from falling into

ands of the Tartars. But being closely
ed by the enemy, the unhappy woman
ng of her own and her child's safety,
tely turned upon them and cut down
l of her assailants. Perceiving, however,
the enemy continued increasing in
er, and knowing that if she and her
should fall in their hands, her person
be violated and the boy become a
netan, she lost all self control and raised
word which she had lately wielded in
efence, to the bosom of her darling
and plunged it into his heart. She then
ith all speed to an eminence, overlook-
precipice, whence after making the
of the cross, she precipitated herself
erished. The Tartars seeing this were
ed and horrified, and they returned to
camp.

nerlan after this passed to the prov-
of Shirag, Passen and Vanant, and
captured the city of Kars, massacred
e number of the inhabitants, making
mainder prisoners. A singular incident,
er, took place at the capture of Kars.
lan took 300 of the Armenian inhab-
and 300 aliens, and divided them
wo distinct parties. He then said to
"I intended to draw lots which of
wo parties should be destroyed; but
have decided that the Christians shall

perish„. Whereupon the Armenians cried: "It is better for us to die Christians than to live apostates„. Two of them, however, two brothers, left their party and went over to the aliens. Tamerlan, however, gave orders for the latter party to be killed, and the Christians to be spared. Whereupon the two apostates stepped forward and cried: "We are Christians and servants of Christ„. Tamerlan said to them: "If you are Christians, why do you stay with the aliens? but you are wicked and deceitful persons, and deserve death„. Hereupon he ordered them to be killed, and left untouched both Christians and aliens.

Tamerlan, after having conquered the whole of Armenia, Georgia, Persia, India, and many other countries, in each of which he left some record of barbarity, went to Asia Minor and captured many cities. Having laid siege to Sebastia, which contained more than 120,000 inhabitants, he promised them on oath, that if they would surrender he would not put any of them to the sword. "Should any man of my army, said he, raise his sword against a citizen of Sebastia, may he be the one to perish by it„. Deluded by these promises, they surrendered. This was a signal for Tamerlan to commit the most horrid barbarities. He first made the young men captives; then he selected all the wealthy

people, and after torturing them to discover where their wealth was concealed, he caused them to be tied head and feet together, and then buried alive in large pits dug for the purpose. The women were bound by the hair of their heads to the tails of young horses, who being let loose tore the poor helpless beings to pieces. The young children he caused to be bound hand and foot, and laid together in an open plain, where they were trampled to death by horses. In commemoration of this horrid fact that place was, and is still, called Sev Hogher, i. e. the Black Ground. The soldiers, amounting to 4 000 men, he caused to be buried alive; "for, said he addressing them, I promised on oath that you should not die by the sword,,. He found in the city a number of lepers, whom he caused to be strangled; "If I did not spare healthy people, said he to them, of what use can you be to me, but to infest my army?,, Then he caused the churches of the city to be demolished, one of which was dedicated to the Forty Saints, and was adorned by forty cupolas, each resting over the remains of one of the patron saints. He afterward captured Bayazid, the sultan of the Ottoman Turks, and taking captives more than 60,000 families, many of whom were Armenian, carried them to Khorasan. Tamerlan afterwards went to Samarcand, where he died

in the year 1406, and left his immense possessions to his son Shahruh, who succeeded him.

Tamerlan, although he committed so many cruelties, always gave those whom invaded a choice of surrendering at discretion, in which case they would only be made tributaries, or of braving his vengeance. It is related of him, that in the course of his expeditions he used camps of three colours, each indicating his intentions. On his approaching a city he would pitch a camp of white tents, thereby promising favour on immediate surrender. If this had no effect, white gave place to red, which denoted anger, and that he would desolate with fire and sword. On a further continuance of the siege, gloomy black took the place of the red ones, by which they were to understand they were devoted to destruction.

It is also said that whatever books Tamerlan found in Persia and Armenia, he took to Samarcand and placed in a large tower, whence he never permitted them to be taken; but if any persons were desirous of referring to any of the works there preserved, they were allowed free access to them.

After the invasion of Tamerlan, Armenia suffered much under the different chiefs between whom its provinces were divided. The principal of these were Yussuf, who

governed the Sasuns; Emir Ezin, the chief of Vasburagan, who resided in Ostan; Miran Shah, one of the sons of Tamerlan, who ruled in Tabriez; Shahruh, the eldest brother of the latter, who governed at Khorasan. The chiefs were continually waging war with each other in Armenia, and destroyed a number of cities in the course of their encounters with each other. Yussuf proved the most powerful of all these, having captured Bagdad, which he placed under his son Scandar. Yussuf, a short time afterwards, took up his residence in Vagharshaguerd, and in an expedition he took the city of Akhaltzikha, where his troops committed the most dreadful cruelties.

On his death his son Shah Mahmud assumed power, and opposed Shahruh the king of Khorasan who had come against him to Armenia. In a battle fought between them in Pakrevant, Mahmud was conquered.

On the departure of Shahruh from Armenia, he appointed Jihanshah, another son of Yussuf, to act as his viceroy. Whereupon war broke out between Jihanshah and his brother Scandar of Bagdad, and the country was much harassed by their hostilities against each other. Scandar was at length killed by his own son Shahubat. Owing to these continual wars a famine broke out in Armenia, so severe that, it is said, many

persons were compelled to eat human flesh, and a vast number went to other countries.

During this year of trouble and misery A. D. 1435, one chief of the Armenian nation proved a kind protector of those of his unfortunate countrymen who came to him. This was Beshghén, the son of Sumpad the Orbelian, who governed the upper part of Sunies, and a portion of Gaban. He was the father-in-law of Alexan, king of the Georgians, and had under his dominion more than 6,000 Armenian families, whom he governed with paternal kindness. During the contest between Scandar and his brother, Beshghén received all the fugitives that came from those parts which the hostile brothers had devastated. The king of Georgia observing the popularity that Beshghén enjoyed, began to fear that his kingdom would be deserted by the Armenians who composed a large part of the population of his country. He therefore at the instigation of his chiefs found means, by promises of large rewards, to induce one of the most intimate friends of Beshghén to assassinate him. The traitor caused Beshghén to swallow poison; the latter who almost immediately discovered his friend's treachery, took various antidotes, but all proving ineffectual he died in the year 1438, and his death threw all the Armenians into the deepest sorrow. The assassin,

however, was arrested and his hands and feet cut off.

The Georgian king being a tributary of Jihanshah the prince of Tabriez, revolted. Upon which Jihanshah uprose against him and devastated Georgia. He besieged and captured the city of Shamshuldé in which were 20,000 Armenians. Here his troops committed the most detestable atrocities. Just before entering the city they beheaded 1664 of their captives, and raising a mound with their heads near the principal gate, they butchered sixty ecclesiastics and grandees on it. When the city had fallen into their hands, they put 3,000 of the people to death. Some had their skulls fractured and crushed, others were quartered alive. Some afterwards through fear being driven to renounce christianity, were, together with those who remained firm in their faith, indiscriminately slaughtered. After this 9400 of the citizens were dragged into slavery. They acted in a similar manner with other cities of Georgia which fell into their hands. On the return of Jihanshah to Tabriez, he appointed his son Hasan Ali, Governor of Armenia. This prince took up his residence in Nakhjivan and appointed subgovernors to preside over the different provinces. These latter were called Begs or Beys, one of whom was named Yaghub, who resided in Erevan.

In the year 1575. Shah Tahmas the First, king of Persia, terribly harassed the Armenians, plundering and destroying their country in the most merciless manner. Some idea may be formed of the atrocities he committed in Armenia, when the records state that the king, by direction of his ministers, issued orders that no tribute was to be exacted from it for fifteen years, since the country exhibited the aspect of a solitary waste. Before the expiration of a third of this period, hordes of plunderers from the regions of Caucasus devastated Armenia, and massacred hundreds of its inhabitants. The result of this succession of destructive invasions was that a famine overspread the land.

In the year 1583, the Turks having conquered the whole of Armenia as far as Tabriez, increased the tributes of the country to such an intolerable degree, that all ranks of people were reduced to the greatest poverty. The pontificate of Etchmiadzin was also taxed to an enormous amount. Harassed and persecuted by the exactions of their tyrants, multitudes of the Armenians quitted the land of their birth and went into voluntary exile. Those who were from Artzakh, Udi, Shamakhy and Kantzag, took refuge in Persia, and were allotted habitations by the king Shah Abas, in the city of Ispahan.

## Chapter II.

### Shah Abas in Armenia.

### A. D. 1603.

ı the year 1603, Shah Abas, king of
ia, incited by the chief of Salmast, who
rebelled against the Turks, and a few
fs of the Medes, gathered a large army,
ı which he set out for the conquest of
enia, then under the power of the Turks.
Persian monarch first arrived at Nakh-
ı which he captured, and thence he
:hed into the province of Erevan, where,
ng taken numbers of the Armenian
bitants, he laid siege to the capital of
ame name. Here a great number of the
enian and Georgian captives were kill-
for Shah Abas had ordered them to
nce to each assault in front of his troops
·e they fell by the arrows and other
iles discharged by the enemy. Unable
ke the city, Shah Abas raised the siege
proceeded to other places of Armenia
:ssed by the Turks. After having con-
:d almost the whole of the country and
inted Persian governors, he returned to
iege of Erevan, which after a blockade

of nine months surrendered. Shah Abas then issued a decree to be proclaimed in all places, that henceforward the Armenians were to consider themselves under the dominion of the Persians. Then he began to torture the Armenian pontiffs, extorting from them great sums of money, which they were obliged to borrow at high interest.

The Turks, after their expulsion from Armenia by Shah Abas, collected a large army, and headed by a great general, named Jighaloghlu Sinan Pasha, set out determined to reconquer it. Shah Abas on hearing what a large number of Turks had been collected against him, became so alarmed, that he resolved to seize all the Armenians and transport them to Persia, in order that on the arrival of the Turks, they should find neither food nor money in the country. Thereupon the Persians were dispersed in parties all over Arménia, where they seized the inhabitants and drove them, like herds of cattle, to a vast plain in the province of Ararat; whence, when all were collected, they were to be marched into Persia. They then destroyed all the cities, towns, villages, and in short every place which could afford shelter to a human being in the country, together with all the stores of corn, wine, oil, hay, and every other article which could supply sustenance to man or beast, not only

hat the Turks might be baffled in their nterprise, but that the Armenians might ıot be tempted henceforward to return to ihe land of their birth. Etchmiadzin was plundered and the Pontiff, who with some ɔther bishops and priests were concealed ihere, were seized and placed indiscriminately ımongst the crowd of captive wretches on ihe plains of Ararat.

Previous to the commencement of the ɜeizure of the Armenians by the Persians, nany of the former on the report of the Sultan's intention reaching them, fled to ɔther countries; others, not a few in number, seizing all their portable property and a good store of provisions, took refuge on the summits of mountains and in caves in the vallies. Among the latter were Manuel, bishop of the monastery of Havutzthar, and Asdvadzadur, bishop of the monastery of Keghart, who accompanied by their relations, both clergy and laity, took refuge in a large cavern in the valley of Keghart, surrounded by stupendous masses of rock. Hither they were pursued by Emir Khan, who was appointed superintendent of the captives; he came upon them with a body of troops. On his arrival in the valley he stood opposite the mouth of the cavern, which was at a great height on the rocks, and called out to the Armenians to come

out, promising them pardon if they would surrender. But the Armenian bishops and their followers, confiding in the strength and security of the place where they had taken refuge, derided and threw stones on the Persians. Thereupon the latter began to try to ascend, standing upon each others shoulders. One of the Persian soldier having in this manner reached the entrance of the cavern, called out to Manuel the bishop, who in his terror losing his presence of mind, made no reply. Upon which the soldier entered sword in hand, and seizing the bishop dragged him outside, where he cut off his head and then threw it down to the Emir below.The rest of the troops then ascended, and entering the cavern, drew out the whole of the Armenians, part of whom they put to death, and drove the remainder to the camp of the other captives.

The Emir then being informed that many others concealed themselves in caves resembling fortresses in the valley of Coratar, proceeded thither with his army; but deeming many of them to be impregnable, he passed them and halted near a large cavern called Jakhushkhan, situated in a lofty place, and under the shelter of a sharp and craggy rock. Here about 1000 men, women and children, had taken refuge, guarding vigilantly the passes of the cavern. The

rsians first fired a few guns over the cavern, endeavour to frighten the Armenians; but ing that this produced no effect, 200 of :m with much difficulty succeeded in .ching the top of the rock, from whence :h great precaution they descended to a .ce where they could stop, and from ıence it was impossible to proceed further foot. They therefore let four of their nrades down the steep by ropes, until ey reached the mouth of the cave, into ıich they entered sword in hand. The menians terrified at this sight, lost all f control and fell on each other like waves, thout offering any resistance. The rest of ) Persians then descended in the same ınner, and entering the cavern, they mas- :red a great number of them and hurled ir corpses into the valley, at the same ıe tearing the children from the arms of ir mothers, and hurling them over the :k. They separated, however, the females, ıo perceiving that they were destined to violated, they rushed to the mouth of ) cavern and threw themselves down the :k; many of them not having sufficient ırage, blindfolded themselves with their ndkerchiefs, and plunged off the precipice, d thus all died. The Persians then carried all that they found in the cavern, de- ınded the rock and returned to the plains

of Ararat, which were covered with the captive Armenians, guarded on all sides by troops to prevent their escape.

The Armenians being thus collected, news arrived to Shah Abas, who resided at Ervantaguerd, that the Turks had arrived at Kars. Thereupon he sent orders to Emir Khan, to move with the Armenians toward the river Araxe; he soon joined them, and directed them immediately to commence crossing the river. Boats and rafts were immediately constructed, and the Armenians compelled to embark without delay. On their making some resistance, the Persians, in order to strike terror into them, cut off the ears and noses of several. Two principal Armenians were also beheaded on this occasion. At the sight of this all hastened to get on the rafts and enter the boats, mothers separated from their children, husbands from their wives, all connection of kindred was disregarded, and they were huddled indiscriminately on to the weak and fragile rafts, which with difficulty and danger transported them to the other side. But the multitude was so great, that the rafts, which continually were going and coming, were insufficient; for the Persian army was also crossing the river at the same time.

Shah Abas, who sitting on the banks surveyed the scene with impatience, poured

torrents of abuse on his soldiers for not being quicker in effecting the embarkation of the captives. The Persians, irritated at the language of their king, fell with rage on the innocent Armenians, beating them without mercy, and throwing hundreds into the river, leaving those who were able to cross the river, and the remainder to be drowned. Among these unfortunate victims were children of both sexes, sick and maimed, pregnant women, and others with infants sucking at their breasts, who unable from their sex and condition to swim, were cruelly abandoned to a watery grave, although they continued to cry piteously for help and mercy to the last moment of sustaining themselves on the surface of the water. Many expert swimmers on their way over were caught by the feet by some of the drowning wretches who filled the river, and both sunk. Some succeeded in getting over by holding on to the tails of bullocks and horses; and others saved themselves by resolutely clinging to the gunwales of the boats from which they had been thrown.

During this scene of death and terror, many of the soldiers treacherously offered the husbands and fathers of such women as struck their fancy, to take them over in safety. It may be conceived what was the fate of those poor creatures who were thus

confined to their care, on their reaching the opposite side of the river. Many of the Persian troops, in the confusion, forcibly seized and bore off the most beautiful of the Armenian women, after killing their husbands, fathers, or brothers, who attempted to protect them. At the taking of the city of Julpha, similar acts of atrocity were committed, and the city was set on fire.

When the whole of the army and captives had crossed the river, they directed their route along the most unfrequented paths, over mountains and through vallies, fearful that the Turks might overtake and rescue the Armenians. On their arrival in Persia, Shah Abas directed that the Armenian nobles and better class of citizens should have habitations in Ispahan; the remainder were dispersed in the towns and villages of the surrounding provinces. He also ordered that they should be in no degree molested, but treated in every respect like his Persian subjects. The Armenians brought into Persia by Shah Abas, numbered 12,000 families, without counting those who perished by the way. Shortly after a thousand families more arrived at two different periods. Those whom he permitted to dwell in Ispahan were divided into two parts, each inhabiting a different district. Over these he appointed two Armenian guardians under the title of

Meliks. The two latter were named Joseph and Murat. He likewise appointed superintendents and guardians over those residing in the provinces, and in order to induce the Armenians to remain under the government quietly and contentedly, he treated them with the greatest kindness, taxing them less than even his own nation. This monarch's policy produced the desired effect, and the expatriated Armenians began to construct houses and to lead a peaceful life.

Some short time after this, Shah Abas again sent troops to the districts of Tabriez Ardevil, Erevan and Kantzag, to collect all the Armenians that might have returned thither. On their arrival in those provinces, they captured 10,000 families, with which they returned to Persia. These captives were settled by the king in Kaurabad and Vahrabad, two very unhealthy places, where in the course of time they all perished.

Shah Abas allotted to the inhabitants of the city of Julpha, a spot exactely opposite Ispahan, on the other side of the river Zendeh Roud which flows by that city, where they built a splendid town and named it New Julpha. They erected also many churches, with convents for the devout of both sexes.

The Turks on their arrival in Armenia were astonished at the events which had occurred. They marched to the regions of

Van and Tabriez where they were encountered and overthrown several times by the Persians, at the last of which they left every article of their property in the hands of the victors and fled. Sinan Pasha, their general, who afterwards retired to the city of Amit, fell sick and died.

On the departure of the Turks and Persians from Armenia, a multitude of banditti made incursions into that country, killing those of the inhabitants who had escaped the invasion of the Persians, and destroying all that remained of its buildings. As recent events had put a stop to agriculture, a sore famine broke out at about this period, and as it lasted for two years the inhabitants were reduced to eat each other. The banditti finding no treasure, were compelled to quit the country.

## Chapter III.

### The exploits of David prince of the Sunies.

### A. D. 1629.

Since the death of Shah Abas, which occurred in the year 1629, to the year 1722, many events took place in Armenia, and

e Armenians endured much suffering rough the several wars fought in their rn country between the Turks and the rsians. Of the most important events, wever, we think it worth while to mention e following, since we regard it as strictly nnected with the civil history of Armenia.

About the first quarter of the eighteenth ntury, the different nations who lived in e regions of that part of Armenia called rtzakh and the country of the Sunies, gan to oppress the original inhabitants a most intolerable manner. Then rose an rmenian named David prince of the Sunies, man of undaunted bravery and strong ntal powers. He built a fort in the village Halitzor, in the country of the Sunies, and llecting number of brave men from among e Armenians, he appointed as their general, e named Mekhithar, a man of great urage and skilled in military exploits. vid, four years after first appearing in ms, fought several battles with his enemies, d being always successful, at length com-etely routed and drove them out of the untries of Artzakh and Sunies.

His enemies, however, returned again in e year 1726, in greater numbers than fore; which being perceived with terror David's followers, they almost all deserted

him. David with only seventeen men, among whom was Mekhithar, remained in the fort of Halitzor. Not at all daunted by this circumstance, he prepared to contend with the enemy; but previous to any battle taking place between the two parties, David was joined by a chief named Melik Parsadan, who brought with him a few men, and by one Der Avedik, who although a clergyman, had been from his youth skilful in the use of arms. Then several other Armenians followed their example, and soon the number of David's followers amounted to 453 men. The castle, moreover, held many of the wives and relations of the men, together with three bishops, thirteen priests, and about forty nuns.

The number of the invaders amounted to 70,000 men, among whom were a great many Armenians, who conceiving that resistance would be fruitless, had abandoned the cause of their country. These hearing that David had decided to oppose them, advanced and encamped near the river of Halitzor.

On the number of their enemies becoming known to the people within the fort, one hundred of them deserted to the enemy; who then crossing the river, advanced to the fort and surrounded it on all sides. Then placing artillery in order of battle, began

to batter it. David, however, defended his position so well, that in the first six days the enemy lost about 1,800 men, while of his party there fell only eight.

The enemy seeing that they could not make any breach in the walls, and that the war was going on very slowly, determined to make an attempt to scale it. They therefore prepared 26 machines of immense width, which were large constructions like a multitude of ladders, capable of holding hundreds of men; and then dividing themselves into three divisions, they sounded all the trumpets in the same time, and carrying the ladder machines to the walls, commenced the assault.

In the mean time David, in answer to the trumpets, ordered the bells of the church to be rung, and while the bishops, priests and other people ran into the church to pray, he divided his men into three divisions, and bravely opposed the assailants who were endeavouring to enter the fort. Their guns, however, were insufficient to repel the numbers who advanced to the walls. Hundreds of them were hurled down, but so numerous were they that no sooner had the foremost fallen, than their places were immediately taken up by those who followed; and although thousands thus perished, and heaps of dead corpses lay beneath the walls, yet their

number appeared undiminished. But the besieged being few in number, were compelled to defend themselves in three places and thus their resistance seemed insufficient, for the assailants were about to enter the fort.

On perceiving the danger, Der Avedik and the general Mekhithar, cried out to David resolutely to continue the resistance a little while longer, while they both, accompanied by two hundred men, issued out of the fort, through a secret passage, and fell suddenly upon the first division of the enemy. This blow was not expected by the besiegers, who, terror-struck, fled to the second and third divisions, crying: "The Armenians are upon us,,. Whereupon a general confusion ensued, in consequence of which the assault was abandoned and the assailants fled. The Armenians pursued and killed numbers of them. The losses of the enemy during the retreat were 13,000 men. The whole of their camp-equipage also fell into the hands of the victors, who took possession of one hundred and forty-eight banners.

The troops of the defeated army dispersed to different cities; 22 thousands of them, however, took refuge in Meghri. This coming to the knowledge of David, he sent Avedik and Mekhithar with 66 resolute men, directing them to lay in ambush for the enemy. The two leaders on approaching Meghri left

their men there, ordering them to enter the city on the dawn of the next morning. They then disguised themselves and entered it as simple citizens. They ate and slept there, and on the next morning they observing the confusion that reigned among the enemy, and seeing their men advancing into the city, sword in hand they fell upon the enemy. These being taken by surprise, made little resistance and took to flight towards the river Araxe. The Armenians pursued them and killed a great number in the height of vengeance.

There was a remarkably narrow defile leading to the river Araxe, called Uzun Bend, by which the fugitives were obliged to pass. Thither the Armenians hastened, and as the enemy entered the pass, they were either cut down, or drowned in the river. Very few escaped death. The victors gathered an immense spoil after this affair; horses, mules in great numbers and quantity of all kind of arms, with which they returned to David.

When the news of this brilliant victory was made known in the adjacent countries, immense numbers of cavalry and infantry were directed to a general rendez-vous in the province of Koghten. All these forces being collected, they were brought against the fortress of Halitzor. While David was occupied concerning the measures he would take

against the enemy, dissensions broke out amongst his adherents; David attempted to allay the ferment of the discord among them, but all in vain.

Being anxious as to the issue of the next fight, he determined to try a stratagem. He had in the fortress about sixty mares; these he caused to be secretly conducted by night to the camp of the enemy and there let loose. In consequence, the stallions pertaining to part of the enemies' cavalry, broke from their picquets as soon as the mares began to neigh, and running here and there in the dark, destroyed the tents and killed many of the men. The whole camp was in a state of confusion, which being perceived by David, he cried out to his men to set all dissension aside and follow him. He forthwith rushed out of the fort at the head of eight men and fell upon the enemy. The others forgetful of their disputes, took up arms and followed him. Aided by the darkness, they increased the disorder among the enemy, who after a little resistance took to flight. A vast number were slain and all their spoil and camp- equipage fell into the hands of David and his party.

The next year, A. D. 1727, the enemy again took the field against David, assembling on the plains of Marat in greater numbers than before. David being encamped

them, they divided themselves into parts, intending to surround him. On ; this David, also formed his small ınto three divisions, commanding them, › advance of the enemy, to turn about ıake a feint of flight, and then all on len to return and attack them. This lone, and the enemy imagining that rmenians fled in fear, remained where were, deciding to march against David n the afternoon and thus destroy him. then kindled their fires and prepared for : before undertaking to march. While were eating, David suddenly returned his army, and without further parley ›on them. The enemy, unable to offer ɜsistance, quitted their camp and fled. ɪrmenians hotly pursuing them, killed at fell into their hands; so that of all who composed that army, very few ɜded in escaping to their own country. ny other valiant exploits were perform- David; who after ruling his country ɛ years, fell sick and died in his own nce at Halitzor, in the year 1728, at ge of 54.

er his death the garrison of Halitzor ıted Mekhithar their governor, but were not so devoted to him as they ɔeen to their deceased chief. Factions roke out among the troops; some were

inclined towards Mekhithar, others towards Der Avedik, and others to other chiefs; this led to the destruction of the little band. For while they were in this condition, the enemy, being reinforced by other troops, again made their appearance in the country, and advancing against the fortress, laid siege to it.

Mekhithar, well aware of the disaffection of the garrison, was doubtful as to the measures he would adopt. Meanwhile the faction headed by Der Avedik at a council decided to sent Der Avedik himself with two other officers to the general of the besieging army, to treat for peace. The conditions were accepted by the enemy, who promised on oath, not to molest the garrison provided they gave up the fort. They, however, retained Avedik in their camp, and sent back the two other officers. Thereupon the garrison determined to surrender the fortress the next morning. Mekhithar on being informed of their decision, secretly stole out of Halitzor that night and fled.

On the dawn of the next morning the gates of the fort were opened to the besiegers, who rushed in and put all the garrison to the sword. The wife and family of Mekhithar fell into their hands, and, together with all the other women and children found in the fortress, were carried away by the enemy. They then levelled the castle to the ground and

quitted the country. Der Avedik, however, was left free in the village of Halitzor.

Mekhithar, after the destruction of the fortress, collected a few troops, with whom he marched against the enemy, and took many places from them. He also besieged and captured the great city of Ortwad, belonging to the enemy, and having slain every person found in it, took possession of the spoil. By these actions he became the terror of his enemies. But unfortunately for history, he was finally betrayed by the Armenians themselves. For whilst he was reposing in the castle of Khintzoretsk, some miscreants treacherously assassinated him, and cutting off his head, brought it to the governor at Tabriez. The governor struck with horror at the atrocity of the act, ordered the assassins to be instantly beheaded.

Mekhithar's men, after the death of their leader, dispersed. Many of the chiefs, who had fought under David, went to Persia, where several of them were appointed generals in the Persian army. Some of them, however, joined the standard of another valiant Armenian chief, named Johannes, who, in the countries of Udi and Kukars, performed many daring exploits against the enemies of the Armenians. He was ultimately obliged to deliver up all the strongholds he possessed, and to go into voluntary

exile, taking up his residence in the city of Astracan, where he was much honoured by the governor. Der Avedik, after some time, went with his family to Galatea, whence he proceeded to Rome. There he applied to the Pope for absolution from the guilt with which he was stained, in consequence of having adopted a profession so opposite to his sacred calling as that of arms. Thence he again returned to the East, where he died.

Prior to the death of David prince of the Sunies A. D. 1722, the Afghans of Ghandahar, having thrown off the Persian yoke, bore their arms to the very gates of Ispahan. The Armenians of New Julpha suffered exceedingly from their incursions, being obliged more than once to ransom the town.

About this period Thahmaz Ghuli Khan began to distinguish himself by the force of his military genius. He reigned over the Persians, became the terror of the East and the scourge of the Armenians. He was assassinated in the midst of his camp by his own followers, in the year 1747. Much contention arose among his chiefs as to who should succeed to his power, which resulted in the accession of Kerim Khan to the Persian throne in the year 1760.

For a long period after these events, nothing of great interest happened in Armenia, in exception of religious contests, which might

be strictly connected with the national civil history. The Armenians, however, being much molested by those foreigners who took possession of their territory, seized every opportunity to leave their own country and settle in places under milder governments. Many migrated to Russia and have since been treated by the Czars with as much kindness as the Russians themselves. Many have been elevated to high offices of trust by the Russian Emperors. Under such a civilized government they have much progressed, not only with regard to mental education, – for they possess in Moscow a well endowed college, – but also in material wealth.

## Chapter IV.

### Events connected with the present century.

When the Russians began to enlarge their dominions in Asia, having taken possession of Georgia, – consequently a portion of North Armenia, as it was – Karabagh, fell in their hands. A few years later, viz. in the years 1828 and 1829, war broke out between the Russians and Persians, and afterwards between the former and the Turks.

The Russians, under the command of

their brave general Paskevitch, advanced against the Persians, and being successful in their attempt, a large portion of Pers-Armenia was annexed to the Russian Empire. Thus the provinces of Sunies, Artzakh, Udi, Paydagaran, and portions of the provinces of Ararat and Kukark, fell under the Russian power.

Then the Russians being also successful against the Turks, took from them an other portion of the province of Ararat and that of Daik.

To the Persians were left portions of the provinces of Ararat, Vasburagan, Paydagaran and Pers-Armenia.

The Turks were left in the enjoyment of the western and the largest portion of Armenia, such as the provinces of High Armenia, Fourth Armenia, Aghtznik, Gortuk, Mogk, Duruperan and the western part of Vasburagan and Ararat. These were divided into six Cantons or Pashaliks; Viz. Erzeroum, Chelder, Kars, Bayazid, Van, Diarbekir. Armenia continues in this condition to-day, without any change having been effected.

Now in order to finish our historical sketch properly, we must mention an event which happened on the Taurus mountains, wherein the Armenians of Zeithoon and the Pasha governor of Marash, were concerned *in* the year 1862.

A large range of the Taurus Mountains, which commences from the Cylician Gates and descends to the Gulf of Alexandrette, is inhabited by two kinds of people: The Turkomans and the Christian Armenians. Both live together on friendly terms though settled in separate territories.

The Armenian territory descends nearly as far as the city of Marash, which is the residence of a Pasha. This territory is named Zeithoon, after the name of the principal borough. It is composed of ten villages, and many small suburbs and farms. Six of these villages are inhabited merely by Armenians; the inhabitants of the other four, are Turkomans, but they are subject to the Armenians. Zeithoon, the principal village, is the seat of an archbishop; Mikhtal or Makal, Chekerdéré, Yezidink, and Alabash, are the names of the other Armenian villages. The number of Armenians who live here amount to about 20 or 25,000 souls. The Turkoman villages are Beshen, Denuk, Kertmen, and Sariguezel, containing in all about 5,000 souls, which form, with the first six and the whole of the suburbs, a confederation, all enjoying the same privileges. This small confederation was governed by four principal chiefs, who enjoyed the title of *Ishkhan,* (princes), and who lived in Zeithoon. The other villages had a chief as governor, who was called *Kiahïa*, that is vicar

Though their number is limited, still in time of war they can raise an army of 7 or 8000 warriors, their ages varying from 16 to 60 years. They are principally iron mongers, their country being exceedingly rich in that metal.

Now in the year 1862, a quarrel ensued between the Mussulman inhabitants of the two villages of Zeithoon, Beshen and Kertmen. After a few days of bickering, a man of Kertmen killed one of the villagers of Beshen, a relation of his. Whereupon the inhabitants of the Beshen village went to take the body of their man in order that they might bury him; but were treacherously waylaied by the inhabitants of the other village, and had another of their own men killed. Thereupon they applied for the interference of Garabed, the kiahïa of the Armenian village of Alabash, situated in the neighbourhood. Garabed, at the head of a few of his men, proceeded to the place of the murder in order to seize upon the guilty man; he had scarcely advanced to the place of the crime, than he suffered a like violence from the people of the Kertmen village and had five of his men killed. On this unexpected attack the Armenians fired upon the agressors, killing several of them and compelling the rest to flee. Then taking the bodies of their slain companions, brought them to the convent of the Holy

Saviour, where they were buried. This being done, the Armenians sent a messenger to the other villages to inform them of the sad affair and to calm the irritation of their minds.

Unhappily a mussulman of Marash, who happened to be on a journey in the village of Alabash, ran speedily back to Marash, reporting that the Armenians of Zeithoon were killing the Mussulmen. Thereupon an irritation ensued amongst the Mussulmen of the city against all the Christians, and they decided to march armed against the Armenians of Zeithoon, and to exterminate them all.

By order of Aziz Pasha, the governor of the city, an army of Bashi-Bozuks, irregular soldiery, began to be gathered in Marash, by whom the christian inhabitants of the city had to endure many illtreatments. Fearing to make their appearance out in the streets, the christians of Marash shut themselves up in their houses, and quickly sent messengers to Aleppo to entreat the French and English consuls residing there, to intercede for them with the Pasha of that city, in order that he might send regular soldiery to Marash for their protection. The Armenians of Zeithoon also applied by letter to the French consular agent to Marash for protection; but their letter being carried to the Pasha by the French agent, had no effect.

While things were in this state, a body of Mussulmen, who were stationed on the frontiers of Zeithoon, was directed to enter the Armenian territory and to commence hostilities. Whereupon Jamis-Oghlu, the chief of that body, advanced during the night towards the village of Alabash, and taking the inhabitants by surprise during their sleep, killed several people. Then he pillaged about forty houses and set them on fire. In this affair several priests also were caught and killed, and many innocent boys were thrown into the fire.

This was the commencement of a war of hatred and destruction. On the 7 of August, Aziz Pasha, at the head of 5,000 Bashi-Bozuk troops, set out against Zeithoon. On entering the Armenian territory, his first step was to advance against the village of Alabash. The Armenians attempted to make a short resistance in order to give time to the women and boys to flee; they then retired, leaving the village to the Bashi-Bozuks, who destroyed it by fire.

Aziz then advanced to a plain called *Ilija,* which lies about three hours march from Zeithoon. Here a suburb is to be found and the monastery of the Holy Saviour. The doors of this monastery being thrown down, four priests and an old woman, who had taken refuge in the church, were killed on

ıe spot, and then the church and the onastery were plundered. The houses in ıe suburb were set on fire, as also the ınvent's buildings, and thus all were deroyed.

The Armenians not daring to hope for sistance from any quarter, and their tertory being surrounded on all sides by hostile ople, tried to make peace on any condiıns, and therefore sent messengers to Aziz ısha offering submission. The Pasha, though ctor, was desirous to end the contest; but hile he was treating, new reinforcements rived from Marash, and thus he thought ıtter to cut the negotiations short and to nd back the Armenian messengers.

Then dividing his forces into three diviıns, on the 14th. of August he marched ;ainst the village of Zeithoon, directing s artillery to cover the march of his intry. The Armenians considering their feriority of number, retired before the valry of Aziz; and the Mussulmen being ite unmolested, advanced from all sides, ırning and destroying, on their way, buildgs, villages and harvest crops.

The Armenians, however, looking with spair on their hopeless fate, sought shelter hind the rocks, where they laid ambusdes for the advancing enemy. Here the valry was unable to reach them, while they

on the other hand, with a well directed fire, could cause great loss to the enemy. This being observed by Aziz, he directed his artillery to act against the positions defended by the Armenians, while his infantry should try to drive them away. But the spot was very well chosen by the Armenians, who being well sheltered, the firing and the efforts of their assailants were without effect. They on the contrary, with their well sustained fire continued to kill numbers of their enemies who attempted to take their positions. Then seeing the enemy all spread over the place in small parties, and judging the moment favourable, rushed out and boldly attacked them. A conflict ensued man to man, which filled the army of Aziz with confusion. The infantry seeing that they were not assisted by the artillery and cavalry, feeling disheartened and being in great disorder, began to flee before the Armenians. In the mean time the Armenian reserve came out from a defilé, and advancing boldly against Aziz's artillery, took possession of their guns.

The Bashi-Bozuks then began to flee from all sides before the Christians, who, sword in hand, pursued them. Aziz, endeavoured to arrest the flight of his men, but they where so much terror-struck, that they would not listen to his command. Thus the Pasha being

forced to follow their example, spurred on his horse and hastened towards the monastery of the Mother of God. There he met with a priest, who knelt down on the door of the church and was praying, and immediately ordered him to be put to death.

This battle lasted four hours; the whole country was filled with dead corpses and dying men. Eight hundred mussulmen were killed on the field. At sunset the Zeithoonians ceased from their pursuit of the enemy, and the army of Aziz, routed, having lost their artillery, their standards and all their baggage, reached Marash in great disorder and entered the city at midnight, having effected in six hours a march of twelve.

Thus the principal village of Zeithoon was saved from complete destruction. All the Armenians of the surrounding villages were gathered there and decided to defend it and their families, to the death. The victors, however, after having ceased their pursuit of the enemy, returned to the battle field, which in the hurry of their flight, the Bashi-Bozuks had left full with all the plunder which was taken out of the houses and churches. They gathered all the spoil, and entered the village of Zeithoon under cover of night, carrying with them the guns, the standards, the arms and all the provisions of *the Mussulmen*, together with the tent of *Aziz and all it* contained.

At this time the English Consul at Aleppo hastened with all speed to reach Marash, for the purpose of informing the christians that regular troops were about to be sent to the city, to protect them against any attack from the Bashi-Bozuks. And indeed, next morning the regular troops, promised by the British Consul, made their entrance into Marash, giving courage and assurance to the terrified christians, who had much feared the vengeance of the routed Bashi-Bozuks.

Immediately after his arrival, the Consul began to make inquiries concerning the events that had so recently occurred, and the other consular agents sent reports to their respective ambassadors at Constantinople, together with a protest from the Armenians of Zeithoon.

Thereupon a Commission, composed of Turks, was directed by the government of Constantinople to proceed to Marash, for the purpose of making enquiries. At the instance, however, of the Marquis of Moustier, the French ambassador at Constantinople, two Armenians of that city and other christians, were permitted to join the Commission.

The result was, that the Armenians were declared innocent insomuch as that they only attempted to deffend themselves against their assailants, and not guilty of rebellion. But their claim to several other privileges

was not justified according to their declarations. Thereupon a Turkish chief was appointed as governor over them, and they were deprived henceforward of those privleges which they had so long enjoyed.

End of the civil history of Armenia.

BODLEIANA · BIBLIOTHECA

## CONTENTS.

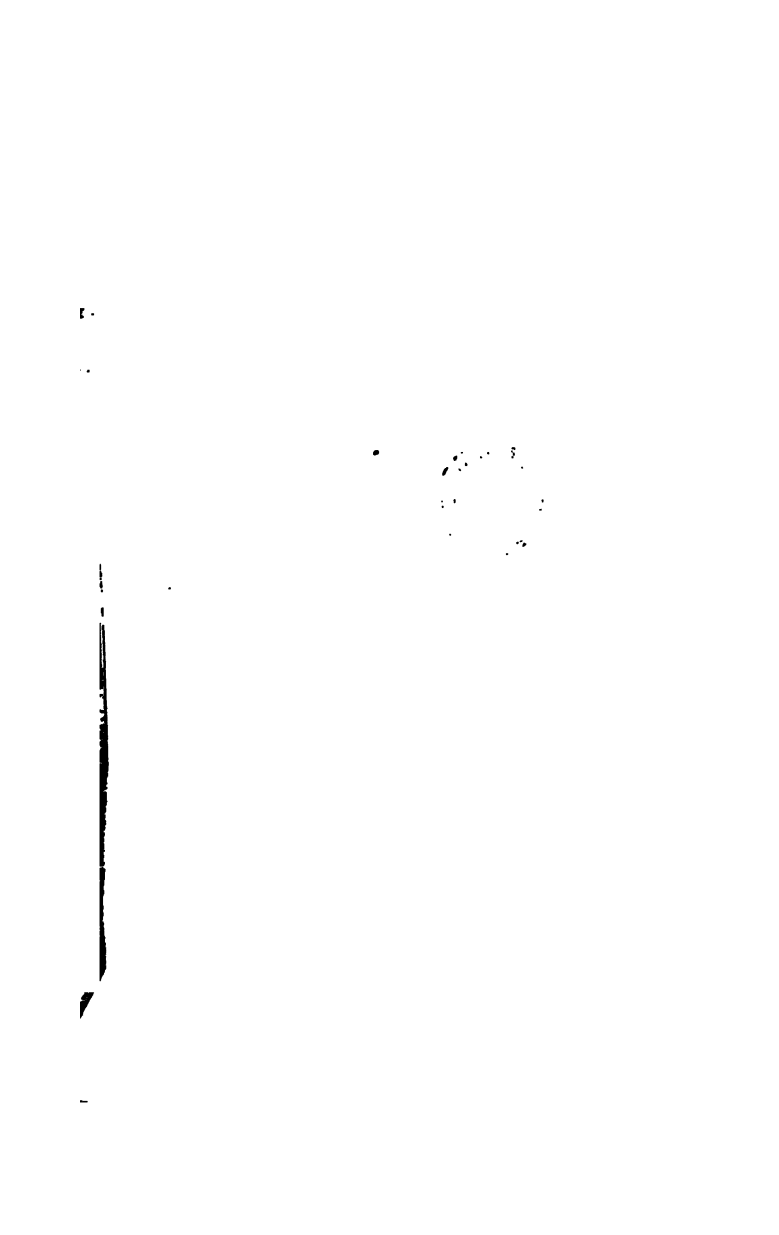
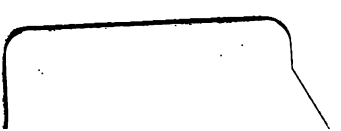
### GEOGRAPHY OF ARMENIA.


| | |
|---|---|
| Preface | 5 |
| GEOGRAPHY OF ARMENIA | 11 |
| Armenia | 9 |
| Mountain chains | 13 |
| Principal rivers | 14 |
| Principal lakes | 16 |
| Volcanos | 17 |
| Climate | 18 |
| Vegetables | 21 |
| Animals | 23 |
| Minerals | 25 |
| Population | 26 |
| Arts and commerce | 29 |
| Character | 31 |
| Religion | 32 |
| Educational progress | 35 |
| Civil division and government | 36 |
| Cylicia | 38 |
| Old and modern names of the provinces of Armenia Major | 41 |


### HISTORY OF ARMENIA.


| | |
|---|---|
| A GENERAL SKETCH OF THE ARMENIAN HISTORY DURING THE FIRST ROYAL DYNASTY | 51 |
| Hayg | 1 |

Armenag and his successors . . 56
Aram and his successors . . . 57
Tigrane the Hayguian . . . 64
Vahagun and other kings . . . 68
THE ARSACIDE OR ARSHAGUNIAN DYNASTY. 71
Vagharshag, Arshag and Ardashes . „
Tigrane the Second . . . . 76
Ardavazd the First and Arsham . 82
Abgar, Anané and Sanadrug . . 84
Events which happened among the kings of Upper Armenia . . 90
Erwant the Second and Ardashes the Second . . . . . 94
The exploits of Ardashes' sons . . 99
Ardavazd, Diran, Tigrane the Third and Vagharsh . . . . 102
Khosrove the First . . . . . 105
Tiridate and the revival of Christianity in Armenia . . . . . 108
Khosrove the Second, Diran the Second . . . . . 111
Arshag the Second . . . . . 117
Captivity of Arshag . . . . . 127
The reign of Bab . . . . . 131
Varaztad, Vagharshag the Second, Khosrove the Third . . . 135
Vramshabuh . . . . . 139
Ardashir or Ardashes the last . . 143
THE GOVERNMENT OF THE PREFECTS. . 145
Vassag the Sunian and the Vartanians 148
The exploits of Vahan and his followers. . . . . 159
The treachery of Vaghthang the Georgian. . . . . 167
*Other* acts of the Vahanians. . . 170

Vartan the Second, Vahan surnamed the Wolf and other Prefects. . 178
The Saracens in Armenia . . . 187
Saracen Governors in Armenia . . 194
Pugha the tyrant . . . . 205
The Pakradunian dynasty . . . 215
Ashod the First . . . . . 216
Sumpad the First . . . . . 221
Ashod the Second surnamed Yergath or Iron. . . . . 233
The reign of Apas . . . . 247
Ashod the Third and Sumpad the Second . . . . . 251
Gagik the First . . . . . 256
Johannes Sumpad . . . . 258
Gagik the Second and the last of the Pakradunian kings . . . 264
The exile of Gagik from his kingdom. 269
The slaughter of the Armenians by Tughril, and the severity exercised upon them by the Greeks . 272
The capture of Ani by Alphaslan . 277
The death of Gagik the exiled, by which the kingdom was entirely lost to the Pakradunians . . 281
The Rupenian dynasty . . . 287
Rupen the First . . . . . „
Constantine the First. . . . 289
Thoros the First. . . . . 290
Leo the First . . . . . 294
Thoros the Second . . . . 299
Meleh and Rupen the Second . . 303
Leo the Second . . . . . 306
Zabel and Hethum . . . . 313
Invasion of the Tartars into Armenia. 318

Leo the Third . . . . . 328
Hethum the Second . . . . . 333
Thoros the Third . . . . . 335
Leo the Fourth and Oshin . . . . 339
Leo the Fifth . . . . . 343
Johannes or Constantine the Third, Guido, and Constantine the Fourth. . . . . 350
Leo the Sixth, last king of the Armenians . . . . . 354
EVENTS OF LATTER TIMES . . . . 365
A record of Events that occurred in Armenia after the decline of the royal power. . . . . „
Shah Abas in Armenia . . . . 375
The exploits of David, Prince of the Sunies. . . . . 384
Events connected with the present century . . . . . 395